



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



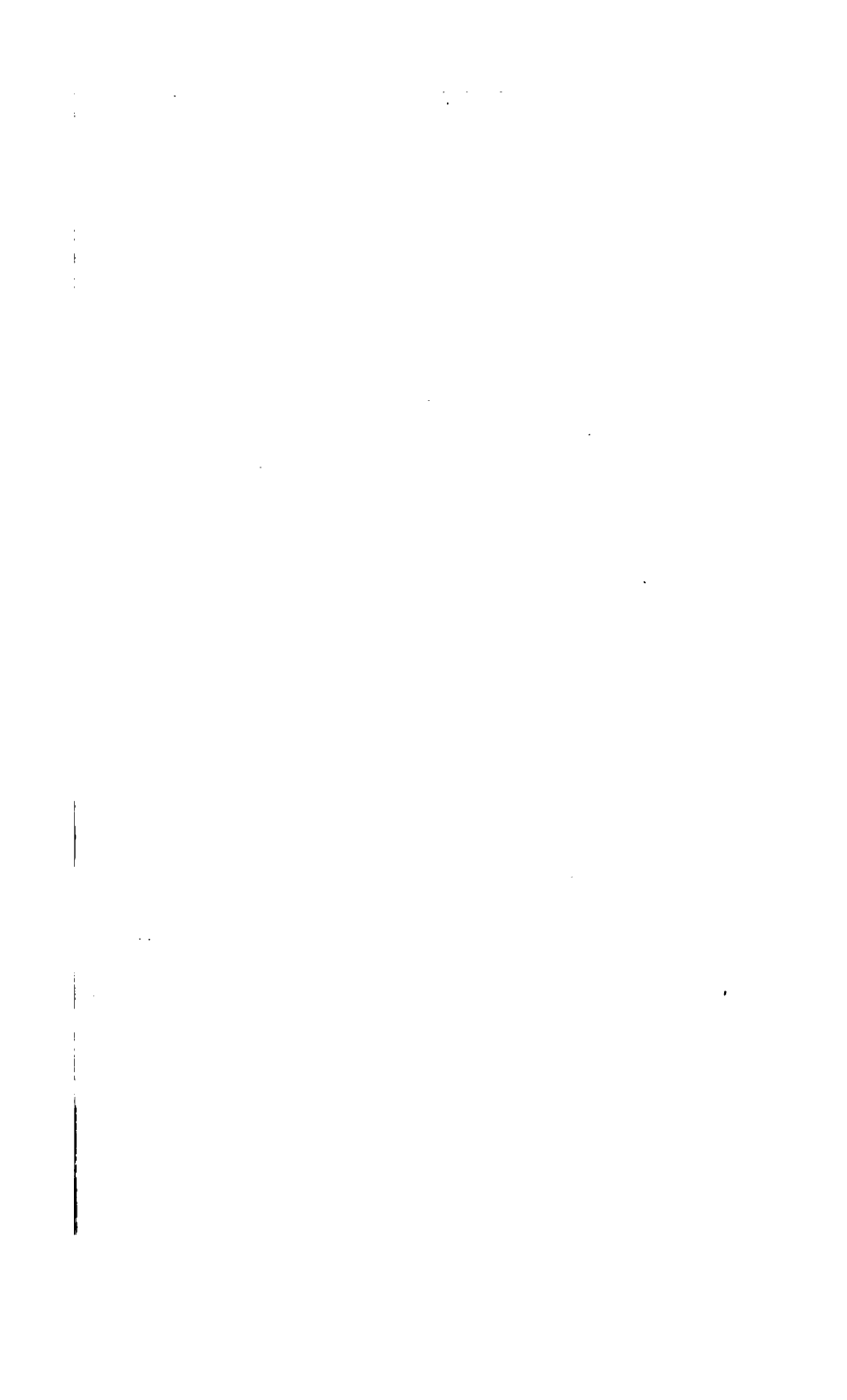


600069527Z

249. 3. 16.











**SIR FRANCIS DARRELL.**

**VOL. III.**

THE HISTORY OF THE

REVOLUTION

---

Printed by A. and R. Spottiswoode,  
Printers-Street, London.

# SIR FRANCIS DARRELL;

OR

## *THE VORTEX:*

*A Poem.*

---

By R. C. DALLAS, Esq.

AUTHOR OF PERCIVAL, AUBREY, MORLAND,

*&c. &c.*

---

E i rimorsi, e il pentire, e il pianger, nulla  
Fia che mi vaglia? ALFIERI.

The gathering number, as it moves along,  
Involves a vast involuntary throng;  
Who, gently drawn, and struggling less and less,  
Roll in her vortex, and her power confess. POPE.

---

*IN FOUR VOLUMES.*

VOL. III.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR LONGMAN, HURST, REES, ORME, AND BROWN,  
PATERNOSTER-ROW.

1820.



SIR FRANCIS DARRELL;

OR

*THE VORTEX.*

---

LETTER XXXVIII.

*Mr. Vernon to Sir Francis Darrell.*

Mount Vernon, Dec.

MY DEAR DARRELL,

You are ill, and you must be well. If I did not see the antidote as well as the bane, your letter would give me the most serious alarm. That conscious unworthiness, those choked avenues of love, that comparison of the damnable present indicative with the blessed præterpluperfect of the subjunctive, *am* with *might have been*, are all symptomatic of melan-

VOL. III.

B



cholia, black bile, or, which is the same thing, blue devils. Why, one would suppose, that you had made it your sole employment to be constantly cracking all the commandments in regular succession one after the other, and that you knew so little of the nature of love as to suppose it essentially repellant, instead of attractive. Come, come, let me be your physician; — I know your case, and I engage for your cure. I will write my prescription, and, as a friend, I will attend to the making of it up, and assist in administering it myself. You will not have to make mouths at it: — you have no objection to syrup of squills; it is not a bit more nauseous:

Dulce ridentem Lalagen amato - horæ xxiv.

Dulce loquentem - - - quant. suf.

Adde

Vocum et nervorum cantus - pro re nata.

Sumenda extemplo, et per vitam adducta.

Sir Francis Darrell.

L. V.

Nonsense, Darrell! Love not your disease! Well then, let it be your medicine. But as I am the M. D. called in,

I must claim my prerogative of complete confidence and implicit obedience. None of your raising the cup to your lip, and putting it away like a wayward child, or I must have you held, and the whole dose poured down your throat at once.

Before I resume *mon sérieux*, in replying to yours from London, let me scribble a dozen French lines, which, I think, give a very fair, as well as pleasant account of love :

Il est aimable quand il pleure,  
 Il est aimable quand il rit ;  
 On le rappelle quand il fuit,  
 On l'adore quand il demeure.  
 C'est le plus aimable boudeur  
 Qui soit de Londres à Cythère ;  
 C'est le plus aimable imposteur  
 Qui soit né pour tromper la terre ;  
 Il fait vingt sermens aujourd'hui,  
 Et demain il les désavoue :  
 On sait qu'il blesse quand il joue,  
 Et l'on veut jouer avec lui.

Now, my friend, try if you cannot trace him under one or all of these characteristics in that region of your frame which he is known to claim as his abode ; and, unless you like him better weeping than laughing, make the place gay, and give

him a cheerful welcome. Stay he will, you may be assured, and I advise you not to put him out of sorts with glouting and blue devils for his companions in your heart.

Your letter, my dear Darrell, is the most serious one I ever received from you. I do not feel myself at all disposed to laugh at you, but I hope still to laugh with you, and often. I approve of your studies, and I heartily wish you success, but I fear your nerves and the *scrupulosity* of your imagination. You have not only to conquer *the serpent*, and the astronomy and chronology, the zodiac of Jacob's children, and the dishonourable practices of Moses himself by divine command; but when you have gained the victory, you will be for asking yourself whether it is your head or your heart that has gained it; and your doubt will turn the day against you — Now, with such a cynosure before me, methinks I should beat you all to nothing in sailing through the ocean I was so commanded to explore.

It is not my intention to preach

hypocrisy, my dear Darrell, but in the state of your heart, and let me add, in the state of HERS, you owe it to yourself, you owe it to her, not to be too nice in your revisions. I would convince myself as far as I could, and I would take the rest upon trust, and then you will be on a par, for that is exactly what she does. You see I obey you in believing that you love, but that I am not so obedient as to your swearing that you would not marry her :

*Il fait vingt sermens aujourd'hui,  
Et demain il les désavoue.*

So far from running to your solicitor's with instructions for the settlements, I shall not even think of it on this side of Christmas, but I am not the less disposed to convince you of my friendship, by doing my best to turn your gloom to brightness, to make you a happy man. Whatever has soured your mind has been suffered to corrode too long—it consumes you daily—it is time to be wise.

Your opening your heart to me is the strongest incentive to mine to share your feelings and to relieve them ; but I know your heart better than you do yourself, and upon my better knowledge will I proceed. It is diseased, and I am free to own, that I think it never could have been cured but for an interposition which I am half inclined to ascribe, in the language of the most exalted of her sex, to Heaven. Yes, the language is strong, but I will not recall it. My opinion of women, though not so derogatory to their dignity as you have at times expressed yours to be, has seldom raised them to that eminence of mind which, where found, justifies the sentiment you once quoted in ridicule from Milton — I almost daily see a “ creature in whom excels

Whatever can to sight or thought be form'd  
Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet.”

And if one, there may be more ; but it has not been your lot or mine to find them in groups — perhaps it never will ; but take my word for it, we have in

this instance, and let us not suffer it to pass without its due effect.

I was very sincere in my rapture, and how could I speak otherwise of a woman who, with endowments to command deference, and beauty that might almost warrant vanity, wins by unaffected condescension and humility? I am no flatterer, Darrell — I will not tell you I think that you deserve her; but, upon my honour, I do not think there is a man on earth who would so completely deserve her, if you were once fortunate enough to make her yours; and so far are your arguments against offering yourself to her sound ones, they are precisely such as I should use to incite you to it — an empty and a desolate heart she will fill, and she will renovate. You will be all that you ought to have been — such a woman is all you want — such a woman does not present herself every day. I conjure you by the friendship you profess for me, by the feelings of your heart in saving her, by her goodness and by her beauty, not to sacrifice happi-

ness to the indulgence of a morbid sensibility.

She has sensibility too, natural, healthful sensibility, and it will be your fault if, in respect to you, it continues confined to your soul. If it were not sacrilege in the present state of your mind to say it, I would say she loves you. Think I have said so, Darrell, — think I have some judgment, and that it is the fact. Do this, and you will experience that change of spirit, which I sincerely and ardently wish to take place in your feelings.

That *you* are in love every line of your letter testifies, and those most which contain the strongest denial. Your vestal fire, your contrast of the weak and the virtuous woman, your abstinence in shaking the hand you could have devoured with kisses, the “momentary something” that passed “uncomprehended and unexamined” at the Cecilian captivation of your ear, the October day, the visions of the night of the October day, the gazings of the twilight of the succeeding morning, the pressure in the

bower, et cetera — What is all this but — love? What would you say if I sent you indications as undeniable on her part? Nay, you don't wish it — and if I could I ought not. So for the present ponder my words, and persist not in the resolution of being your own enemy, and, what I shall forgive you for still less, the enemy of this noble-minded, beautiful woman.

“ And why not young Dartford have her, &c.”

How very sincerely, disinterestedly, and piously was that paragraph of your letter penned! It is an admirable piece of moral and religious reasoning. It is a regular argument — it has a beginning, a middle, and an end — the beginning sets forth a proposition for saving a young man by sacrificing a young woman; the middle proves the humanity of it, by showing how it will also save an affectionate mother; and the end infers that the young woman, this beauty of mine, should be left to her own choice, which she has too much good sense to make in a hurry. A Tully or a Demosthenes, an



Eldon or an Erskine, could not have laid the argument more scientifically, or brought it to a more accurate conclusion.

Now, what is to be done? In spite of your nice adherence to the rules of logic, facts are stubborn things, and set all the labours of Aristotle and Cicero at defiance — they leave the lady no alternative. What fact can possibly do that? say you, trembling for the intelligence of her having accepted young Dartford, or his mother. Shall I leave it by way a Christmas riddle for you to solve? Christmas is at hand, and Christmas twelvemonth would leave you puzzling out a solution, which, when known, is as natural and clear as the sense of your aforesaid argument. I shall therefore tell it you at once — her Geneva lover has completely thrown her off, and will have nothing more to say to her. So you see that, between this volatile fellow and your conscious unworthiness, the poor girl is doomed to remain a vestal, or turn nun in her own defence, unless I take pity upon her; and really, if she goes on this way, daily winning more and more

admiration, there will be some risk of her supplanting La Belle ; in which case I shall immediately set about supplanting you, soul and body, after having persuaded myself that there is more true happiness in a cottage than in a palace.

To be serious : that foolish lad Dartford is going to be married to an Italian girl at Rome of the name of Belvoce. Miss Saville knows her, and speaks well of her father, but, with a candour that does her honour, acknowledges that the lady is not such a daughter as might be wished for Mrs. Dartford.— Thus guarded by the invaluable interference of friendship, the mother, whose undue and injurious fondness of her son had incited her to a resolution of depending upon his not entering on so serious a contract without a certainty of those virtues and manners of which he well knew her estimation, and who was accordingly about to write in a style to please him, has written in the most firm yet affectionate manner to him ; conjuring him, nay, commanding him to return to England on receiving her letter, and

not to think of forming any engagement till he sees her. I am angry, but what does it signify — there is fate in it as in all things else, and men and women are but its puppets differently dressed up to act different parts. Though perhaps fate is tottering on its throne with you — take care — it is a resolute despot, and marrying Dartford to a Belvoce may make a monk of you, as you are so determined not to marry.

The most absurd part of the history yet remains to be told. The same opportunity which brought his letter to his mother, brought one to Miss Saville, from her friend at Florence; who, when she wrote, had him enrolled on her list of suitors. Of this lady she talks as of a second self, and wishes he had been worthy of her. Her name is Pisani — perhaps you have heard of her before. They were brought up as sisters, and the affection of that tie exists between them in its dearest and purest state. It is delightful to hear the language of such friendship uttered by such beauty.

I heard of your *mauvaise aventure* on

the Malvern road, from Godfrey, when the party returned to Manor House, and I felt for you — it was devilish mal-à-propos. I don't exactly know what they think of it — After the first unavoidable notice of occurrences, the family ceased the mention of the Bramblebears. I once asked Miss Saville her opinion of Lady Betty : — the answer was short.

“ I can only speak of her person,” said she, “ I think her handsome, and well-formed.”

She immediately spoke of something else. Silence indicates thought ; but, be that what it will, it is softened, if not altogether obliterated, by the impressions at Grove Park, by the happy 26th of October. You are no longer a dreaded character at Godfrey's ; every individual extols you, loves you, prays for you — are you not mad in refusing the hearts of this group ? Your account of the arrival at Grove Park made my heart beat quicker than usual — I thank you for the sensation — that your feelings were as you tell me is not to be doubted, but I almost doubt my senses, when I hear that you reject

all repetition of them — that you dash the bowl of bliss out of the hand that offers it to you.

In following you to your bower next morning, I have no wish to penetrate into the sanctuary, at the expence of a pang, such as I see it must cost you to open it. I can easily conceive, Darrell, what it all means, and how such an imagination as yours can work up a common incident, into all the refinements of a deep tragedy ; — but, my friend, a fine imagination is the worst gift of Nature, when employed upon the sinister events of life, and it behoves Reason to curb it. Without this check Nature is her own enemy, sacrificing all her joys to the indulgence of one gloomy fancy.

Poor Miss Saville must have been dreadfully shocked, when the idea of suicide presented itself to her, — what action of your's could have raised such an idea, so contrary to the resolutions I have heard you express on that subject? But be that what it may, every thing that passed in the bower, convinces me of the state of your heart, and I

really believe I may say of her's : and I sincerely hope that your studies will lead you to the worship of the God of Love, whether you find him in your Bible, or in the hearts of each other. Nothing will give me greater pleasure, than to be the medium of conveying to her sentiments that may promote the happiness I wish you both. I would repeat to you, that you have no time to be discussing delicate points of imagination, were I not of opinion that her heart is at anchor — yet trust not to this — If the ground be unsure and open to storms, the anchor may be weighed and cast in a safer harbour.

A few days ago, my sister gave an entertainment — it was a pleasant one, but I saw to what point admiration flowed, and in the midst of my gaiety, I thought of you, and wished my friend Lord Mariton at the devil. There are others touched, but he seems the most desperately wounded. The Godfreys give a ball on Christmas-eve. Will you not come down here before? You will find a friend in Lady Mount-Vernon ; I won't swear

that the Godfreys and Savilles have not made her quite in love with you, but I suppose you will take no advantage of this intelligence, as you are sure that you are no gallant. — Pray put your books aside for the holidays, and come down, and if you like I will invite Rufus for *fun*.

Of La Belle I shall nothing at present — she and her dear Augusta, as she calls her, are so much together, that I cannot even breathe a sigh ; but I fear I begin to be too seriously of your opinion that “ she is beautiful.” — I sometimes venture a look, as I accompany my guitar — She sings sweetly herself — but of voice none can be boasted near her Florence cousin. I do not wonder at the “ momentary uncomprehended something,” that hers in unison with the organ created. I have myself felt something like that something — only I comprehended it, and it was not momentary — when I have listened enchanted as she sung to the harmony of the piano. She plays and sings, however, but seldom, and seems to prefer painting. She makes

her cousin sing and play, and pretends to like to hear me make a noise with the guitar.

I conjure you, my dear Darrell, to come down next week, and stay till we go to town, which is to be about the end of January, before Parliament meets. — If you will not come, let me hear from you.

Ever yours,

L. VERNON.



## LETTER XXXIX.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Mr. Vernon.*

May Fair, Dec.

No, my dear Vernon, no—I cannot present myself at balls and concerts—I thank you for your invitation, and Lady Mount-Vernon, and your other friends for their good will. I neither sing nor dance at present, but it is some happiness to know that you are all so happy, and that you are all enjoying life at this *exhilarating* season—Why should I disturb the fancy? If happiness can be fancied, fancy it by all means—but if you value the fancy, beware how you look skin-deep into one another's faces, lest you meet opinions to sweep away the smiles that compose the joys of the heterogeneous assemblage. How many in the hundreds that will be dancing about

the Savilles and Godfreys on Christmas-eve would shed a tear if they were to die to-morrow? Which would be the greater grief, the death or the disappointment? Is there a man or a woman among them, that could bear to lay open the thoughts of the heart to the fellow-being entitled bosom-friend? Will there be a spinster in the room, who will not dart the venom of envy on matchless beauty?—a he creature whose swimming eye will not tarnish it with the licentious effusions of his rank thoughts?—a Mariton who will not presume on his sweet person hung to the tinsel cords of a title? Oh Vernon, Vernon! Is this adulterated existence worth clinging to? No, “man’s happiest lot is not to be.” And shall this “beauty, too rich for use, for earth too dear,” be exposed to the indelicate gaze of every lord and commoner of your brother’s and of Mr. Godfrey’s acquaintance? You will tell me *yes*; and you will turn some jest upon the love-feeling jealousy, and all that, which your letter has created in my stormy bo-

som — I know it — I give you leave — I will bear every thing from you, Vernon ; for, in spite of your participation in the nature of this hodge-podge of fortuitous atoms, I have found in you, and in you only, a realizing of what my early reading taught me to picture as friendship. You bear with me, and I confess there is much to bear — and, if I wanted further conviction, it lies unfolded before me in the letter I have just received from you. I thank you for it — if it probes, it also cleanses and refreshes — I thank you for it — it has given me some pain ; it has given me much pleasure.

I am not so wedded to my opinions, or so blinded by my peculiar feelings, as not to perceive that I have given you the usual grounds of judging the state of my heart towards Miss Saville to be what is denominated the passion of love ; — nay, I am half-persuaded myself that it is ; but there is one undeniable proof to the contrary : I have never yet combined, nor ever can combine, her image in my mind with the idea of mar-

riage. I am sensible that she possesses the greatest interest in my heart — an interest, call it a love, that would impel me to devote my fortune to her, to lay down my life for her; but it raises not the hope or the wish of making her mine. On the other hand, I seem to detect something, — for you are not more clear-sighted than I am watchful on this point — in the repugnance I feel, and which I know I have already betrayed in this letter, to image her as another's; —but then, though this would be a symptom in ordinary cases, it is not so in mine; mine is not an ordinary case. — I think no man deserves her, and thence my repugnance: — she is divine, and corrupt mortals should not approach her, I least of all — I, who never would be accepted if known; and to be accepted, not known, would be to commit a murder worse than the first — that I mean which deserved the curse of Cain. — It is very clear, Vernon, very clear, that my heart, impressed as it is, does not lead me to think of Miss Saville, with the passion of a lover; and all that you have said, and

said so sweetly, but serves to animate my resolution of never carrying corruption and horror to her arms.— Oh ! never.

You exclaim : “ What neither think of her yourself, nor suffer another ? Doom her to a life of celibacy ! Send her back to Italy to be in time promoted to the government of a nunnery !— I do not say so — she ought to bless — whom ? Let your imagination create me a man worthy of her, give him a name, and tell it to me, that I may answer. But tell me not of fops, and loungers, and lords ; and your friend Mariton is all three combined in one. Sweep him off, I beseech you, as you would a wasp from the finest ripening peach on your tree. If I talked of Dartford for a moment, it was that I looked on him as a being yet unformed, whom she might mould, and raise to some degree of worthiness — but among the beings already formed, let her not search — besides, he is abroad, and there was time to give judgment and circumstances their chance — but here are your beaux

regularly summoned to taste the nectar of her eye, and bid largely for the vintage. I beseech you, Vernon, by the friendship you profess for me, by the sanctity of yet unblemished beauty, by the enchantment of virgin-love, to protect the bloom of this incomparable girl. Do I not know men? Do I not know this Lord Mariton? Would I suffer him in my house? Your brother is very careless in these things, but Mr. Godfrey is not, and perhaps he is not invited to Manor House, on Christmas-eve. But he or any other contaminator of the source of love, wherever that source is found pure, should be rigidly fenced out — laugh, Vernon, laugh, if you please, but think not that I have forgotten myself — I say where that is found pure. — This is no preaching of a sinner against himself; — I have told you again and again, corrupting others, was never my sin — yet sinner I am, and even she, my tasking angel, could not wish a sincerer penitent than I also am — This by the way —

Your pleasant *prescription* would require no force if I were in a state to take it. — Mine is no childish shuddering — but an insurmountable impediment. My dear Vernon, your language is indeed very strong, but you are mistaken ; I am sure you are mistaken, if not altogether in the state of my heart, completely in the state of **HERS**, which your emphatical dashes would try to persuade me beat but for me. It is not, it must not be so — wretched indeed would be her lot, and doubly wretched mine — we never can be united. Could I forget this, and you would prove that conception of yours true, I — but why do I yield me to this groundless suggestion of your buoyant spirits ! — You were right before, when you said that the saving of my soul was the concern she had for me ; — it was nothing else — it is nothing else. I do think your judgment good — good in general ; but you see when you came to the indications on her part, you could not proceed, you could specify none. Ponder ! I ponder to madness. — Her enemy ! I should indeed be her enemy were I to

attempt to gain her affections. I believe I must beg you to desist writing on the subject. Take care, take care, do not persuade me to so damnable an act. — I have saved her from some savage villain, and shall I place a canker-worm in her breast? — You speak of her as she deserves: — “Such a woman does not present herself every day.” It may be even true that “such a woman is all I want;” — but think not, my friend, that all that is wanted by her soul (for she has a soul) can be found in me.

I am “no longer the dreaded character at Godfrey’s.” — Why? They know me not; and they estimate me by a few late acts, which sparkle. — Vernon, I must open my heart to you, cost me what it will — but not now — not on paper — when we next meet it will be time enough. You shall judge whether it be madness in me, or virtue, to refuse “the hearts of this group.” I merit not love, but I would not be hated — abhorrence from such beings would be the height of misery. Refuse their hearts! Why, man, I would give the world to possess them but



think you it is on me they would bestow them? No, it is on virtue: — what of that they have seen in me effaces even slander by its native brightness, which illumines every agent of it with its glory. They know no more, they seek no more; but the heart itself rejects that homage which it cannot claim. I know not whether hatred is not more tolerable than love, which a clear sight of its object would convert to abhorrence.

“An empty and a desolate heart she will fill, and she will renovate.” What honied words are these! Where have you collected such sweet poison? It is

the insane root  
That takes the reason prisoner. —

It binds the senses to imagination, and gives a seeming reality to the unsubstantial conceptions of the brain — the thought alone filled my heart, renovated my blood — for a moment — but for a moment — and the void and the desolation became more intolerable.

You see I answer your letter almost word by word. You are, in general, as

attentive to points as myself; in yours — but it is very excusable where you are — one or two things escaped you to which mine might have suggested a reply. I expressed an inclination to have the meeting with Lady Betty at Malvern cleared up, to have it satisfactorily proved that it was accidental. This is one thing you make no reply to. I requested, if you had an opportunity, that you would let Miss Saville know how I was occupied: — a second point unnoticed. I think I may mention, as a third, your not telling me whether you had had an opportunity of not saying that I was unhappy or gloomy, that is, of contradicting the idea, if it happened to be expressed. Pray laugh on; but after your laugh, be serious.

I will now tell you something of my studies, of which you may impart as much as your friendship appreciates. — I cannot boast of much progress in the religious history of the Jews. I meet stumbling-blocks at every step I take. The subsequent dispensation in favour of the rest of the world equally gruels

me. Vicarious compensation! and the victim a Deity! — One advance in favour of the Bible I have made — I do not open it to laugh. I do not, it is true, find conviction in it; but I have met with many sublime and exquisite passages. I have shut it up for a time, but intend to return to it; meanwhile I have been studying Plato, and with rather more success. If the Son of Joseph and Mary had had sufficient education, I should suspect he too had studied him. In the works of that divine philosopher we find the embryo of a Trinity, and the full birth of immortality. You must read these works, Vernon, with great attention; you must resume your Greek — that I know will cost you but little time; but if it took you ten years it would repay you. That great mind conceived Divine attributes; and the Being possessed of them must be a Deity. He conceived noble qualities flowing from a deity to a being created by him. Man must be this noble creature: — the existence of a good God and of a good man necessarily implies Omnipotence in the former and

immortality in the latter: if a good man dies eternally, what shall be said of the goodness, of the justice of the Deity? What is chance? Incongruity, or a solitary consonance amidst universal disorder. — What is order? Uniform direction. — Order is the proof of intention — intention proves mind — infinite intention an infinite mind — an infinite mind is God. So far these deductions are clear; but there is one attribute of a God wanting, or is not so clear, a prime attribute too in respect to mankind. I told you I could not be a Manichean. What am I to do? I every where see signs of malignity. Here it is then that my faith is to have its first trial. — There is a God proved in every other respect to my understanding — it only remains for me not to believe either in my senses or in the reasoning faculty with which nature has endowed me. It is a hard morsel to digest — I must give it time. I do not hesitate, however, to say at once — that there *is* a God, and that there *ought to be* an immortality, but not an immortality of vipers. These

## LETTER XL.

*Mr. Vernon to Sir Francis Darrell.*

Mount-Vernon, Dec. 26th.

MY DEAR DARRELL,

YOU know me too well to suspect for a moment that I should be so brutal as to have delayed answering your letter till to-day, had I received it in time to comply with your desire of writing without delay, though, upon the whole, I am not sorry that the delay unavoidably occurred — why it did, you shall know presently : meanwhile be easy, perturbed spirit, and patiently await your fate. We have been to Bath. As soon as I tell you what produced the excursion, away flies the blood again up to your head, and the Lord have mercy upon you ! You ought to be cautious, Darrell, for the flying of the blood to the head is the prevalent mode at the court of the scythe-sceptred Dry-

bones, and has been for some years — pray send for a surgeon, and be bled before you read any farther.

Well, taking for granted that a vein has been breathed, and ten or twelve ounces of blood subtracted, you may go on. A fixed head-ach for a day or two, attended with an unaccountable depression of spirits, had made a slight alteration on the countenance and whole appearance of La Belle's dear Augusta, Sir Francis Darrell's tasker, Mr. Vernon's beauty, Lord Mariton's — what shall I say? charmer, divinity, idol, whichever of these you please. It was first observed by Mr. Saville, next day by her cousins both. At dinner Godfrey proposed, as the best remedy, a change of place; and that, without more ado, we should set out the very next morning, and take a run to Bath: — it was immediately agreed upon and executed. It proved a very pleasant trip, and had the desired effect; for La Belle's dear Augusta — Homer and Virgil repeat whole passages, mayn't I? — Sir Francis Darrell's tasker, Mr. Vernon's beauty, Lord Mariton's — what shall I

say? is returned perfectly restored — with the exception of a slight degree of a symptomatic affection, called musing, observable by an experienced practitioner about the muscles of the lips, and by the narrowing of the space between the eyelids, while the eye itself seems occupied with no external object. This is observed by nobody but me, and it is by no means a dangerous affection, though it probably prevented her dancing so much the night before last, as she would otherwise have done. Be quiet — she did not once dance with Mariton. — Surely, there is anodyne enough in that to let me go on regularly, that is, in my own way, without reversing the order of things, to come to the ball at Manor House before we have been to the pump-room at Bath. I really feel for you, my dear Darrell, but I must not treat your disease too tenderly; I must not sigh and moan with you; I must rally, and laugh to rouse you, and roused you shall be to happiness, if ever happiness was known on earth, or your romantic caprice and wire-drawn refinements do not overset it all.

I have told you the immediate cause of our going to Bath, but the remote cause is to be traced some hundred and thirty or forty miles nearer to the celebrated region of fire-worship, in a certain spot called May Fair. Now listen: — you were more than half angry with me for not forcing a conversation with Miss Saville, on the subject of your gallop with Lady Betty. — All I could do at that time I did, and I told you how she cut the concern. — Her manner taught me that it was not to be repeated. — Circumstances remaining as they were, I should never have introduced it again; but it was your good or bad fate, that Lady Barbara liked the joke; and having heard Miss Saville mention you with some degree of enthusiasm —

“ Ay, my dear,” said she to her, before Lady Mount-Vernon and me, “ I’d advise you to take care of him; — he is a very good creature in some things, and a confounded bad one in others. They say he is very bold, and makes love to every woman he meets.”

“ He appeared to me the reverse of



bold," said your beautiful champion, "and I hope that he is belied in other respects as well as in that."

"Law! my dear," replied Bab, "you know nothing at all about him; — he has behaved very well to you, to be sure, but there's no knowing where things will end with such a chap."

I watched Miss Saville's countenance: I saw her muster resolution not to let it vary.

"Don't be severe, Bab," said my sister, "you know nothing but by hearsay." —

"That's so like you," replied she; "I should be glad to know," continued she, laughing, "how I should know any thing but by hearsay? Dear me! I like the fellow — there's no fear of his doing me any harm. I don't wish to scandalize him, only I would not have this dear girl like him too well."

"My dear Lady Barbara," said she, "do not be afraid of that; — I wish him well, but I shall never like him *too* well."

A slight stress on the word *too* con-

veyed something of equivocation to my ear.

"The devil's in the man," resumed Lady Bab, laughing, "why does not he get married himself and leave other people's wives alone?"

Miss Saville said not a word, but kept her eyes on Lady Bab, as if afraid they should meet mine. I said —

"Darrell is slandered."

"Hah! Lewy!" cried she, "hold your tongue, or —" here she stopped and laughed.

"I rather think with my brother," said Lady Mount-Vernon.

"Well," pursued Lady Bab, laughing, "if you won't believe your ears, believe this dear girl's eyes."

"Mine!" cried Miss Saville, slightly colouring.

"Law! my dear, to be sure, at Malvern: — I don't know the particulars, but Tim Dawson says he had his arms about Lady Bet, and that you saw it. — But I saw enough myself at Bramblebear Hall before ever you knew him. It's an old affair now."

Confounded, but not confused, the

lovely girl was at a loss how to attend to a conversation as new as improper for her ear:—but, invoked in testimony against you, she coloured deeper than before, and with a look in which there was dignity mingled with some anger and more sorrow, she said, she was not surprised that the man who could take such a liberty with her name, did not scruple to report a falsehood of Sir Francis Darrell.

“Law, my dear,” cried Lady Barbara.

“And permit me to add,” continued Miss Saville, without suffering the interruption, “we cannot have a stronger lesson of caution how we give ear to report.”

“Why, my dear,” roared Lady Bab.—

“And,” said your persisting defender, “I must observe, that the detection of this falsehood affords me grounds to believe that all else reported against him may be false.”—

Lady Barbara essayed another interruption, but in vain; truth and feeling were afloat, and the tide of sentiment

on which they rode was not to be stopped.

"Sir Francis Darrell's actions as far as I know them," continued she, "bespeak a very high character : his generosity is unbounded, and his attention to the rules of delicacy scrupulous in the extreme. I must repeat, Lady Barbara, that I am in no danger of liking him too well ; but the gratitude I shall always feel towards him prompts me to wish that my esteem may not fall short of what is his due. It is a pity that the falsehoods of reports cannot be all as fully and as quickly detected as this ; they might then rebound to the credit of the slandered person, as this does."

Lady Barbara did not laugh as usual, but looked rather sorry.

"My dear," said she, "you take this thing too serious by half: — but Tim Dawson did not invent it — I'll be shot if he did ; and it was natural enough for me to believe it, after what I saw with my own eyes at Bramblebear Hall in the summer."

"Bab," said my sister, "let us drop

the conversation, it cannot be agreeable to Miss Saville ; — your eyes were perhaps deceived.” —

“ You mean they were perhaps too sharp,” cried Bab, — “ but, law ! I would not hurt this dear girl for the world ; and, as I told her, I myself think Darrell a very good creature ; don’t you be angry, my dear.” —

“ Indeed Lady Barbara,” said she, “ I am not angry ; I have no cause to be angry with you ; and, as far as concerns my opinion of Sir Francis Darrell, this foolish assertion of the gentleman, your friend” —

“ No friend of mine, my dear,” cried the rapid Barbara, “ no friend of mine ; — hunts with my cousin, takes a hunting dinner here now and then, rides well, but got the deuce of a somerset about this time twelvemonth, the 11th ; I should not have pulled up to look after him if he had broke his neck, not I : — no particular friend of mine I assure you.”

This eloquent rebutter of my cousin Bab’s was in fact inspired by a consci-

ousness that Mr. Timothy Dawson, emboldened by the concern she had expressed at his fall, and certain consols to the amount of thirty thousand pounds, with a squint at a cousin's right of chase at Mount-Vernon, had shown symptoms of aspiring at her Ladyship's third finger of the left hand. Diana did not set the hounds upon him to worry him up; but then his case was distinguishable from Acteon's; it was all fair and above board, and though his goddess laughed him into a mute centaur, she continued, and continues, to hunt with him whenever he pleases to join the hounds. Lady Mount-Vernon smiled.

"Barbara," said I —

"None of your jokes, Mr. Vernon," cried she, with her pleasant soft laugh. "I'll have none of your jokes; come, my dear," putting out her hand as she went across the room to Miss Saville — "kiss and be friends."

And down she popped her head and ravished a kiss. You would have been as jealous as Kiteley, had you been there and in my position. She had on her

the conversation, it cannot be agreeable to Miss Saville; — your eyes were perhaps deceived.” —

“ You mean they were perhaps too sharp,” cried Bab, — “ but, law ! I would not hurt this dear girl for the world ; and, as I told her, I myself think Darrell a very good creature ; don’t you get angry, my dear.” —

“ Indeed Lady Barbara,” said she, “ am not angry ; I have no cause to be angry with you ; and, as far as concerns my opinion of Sir Francis Darrell, the foolish assertion of the gentleman, your friend” —

“ No friend of mine, my dear,” cried the rapid Barbara, “ no friend of mine — hunts with my cousin, takes a hunt dinner here now and then, rides well but got the deuce of a somerset about this time twelvemonth, the 11th ; should not have pulled up to look after him if he had like his horse, not I : — no particular business, I assure you.”

my co  
by a c





riding-habit and a round black hat; and as she bent I saw only her bust, with her florid cheeks and round face: if you had not taken her for a Bacchus embracing Ariadne, you would have sworn it was an impudent fellow kissing your *Tasker*, — only there was no resistance on her part, and on Bab's part she gave a smack as if she liked it; — but remember Bab's a woman. I longed to trim her, both for the scandal and the kiss, but I thought it better not to bandy jests with her; and therefore I only took the opportunity of assuring the party with a serious face, that I knew for a certainty, to which I pledged my honour, that the meeting at Malvern was unexpected by you. In spite of Bab's beginning a laugh, which she curtailed of more than three parts of her usual ha ha's, your champion was pleased even in a higher degree than was perceived by her two friends. I thought she thanked me by her look, and the more that she deemed it proper to restrain her own instrument of words.

Now comes a blast, in the shape of

Mariton : bear it well, it will soon be over. But in he came, just at the conclusion of this smacking pacification of the Belligerent Powers, a newspaper in his hand. His devoirs were no sooner paid than he exclaimed, —

“ Well ! who can *this* couple be ? ”

“ A couple of hounds ? ” asked Lady Bab.

“ A couple of distinction,” replied he.

“ Another elopement ? ” quoth Bab.

“ Even so,” responded my Lord,  
“ another and another.”

Some of our VORTEX, thought I.

“ Let me see,” said I, taking the paper out of his hand.

I easily found the paragraph, as a cross in ink was put to it by way of reference.

“ I wonder Caroline is so long,” said Miss Saville, not liking the topic, or dreading the perusal of the paragraph,  
“ she was to have taken me up at two, and it is ten minutes past.”

“ Dear ! my dear,” said Lady Barbara,  
“ you always give half an hour’s law : —  
come Lewy, an’t you going to read ? ”

I handed the paper back to Lord Mariton, who read as follows : —

“ Report talks of the elopement of a lady in her way from Cheltenham to Bath with a gentleman, the intimate friend of her husband : — they are whispered to be a couple of distinction, Sir \* \* \* \* and Lady \* \* \* \* who are off for the continent.” —

— “ I think I hear the carriage,” said Miss Saville, rising and going to the window.

“ So it is,” added Lady Bab, following her, “ there it is yonder, turning round the fir plantation : but law ! my dear, what good ears you must have to hear it a mile off !”

“ These reports, my Lord,” said my sister, “ deserve nothing but contempt : this will be contradicted to-morrow.”

“ If it is not true,” replied Mariton, “ and I were Sir Francis Darrell — ”

— “ Sir Francis Darrell !” said I, “ you know that he is my friend ?” —

“ I do, and I therefore give you my authority : it is the talk at Acheson’s House in Hereford.”

"I take upon me" said I, "to pledge myself to you that it is false; may I then beg of you to contradict it?"

He assured me he would:—I then declared loud enough to be heard in every part of the room, that I had lately received a letter from you, and knew that you were much engaged at your house in town. You see what it is, Darrell, to have a character. — There was to me, who was watching every muscle of indication, an evident agitation in the bosom of your lovely friend: I fear it was not unobserved by Lady Barbara and my sister. She made several blunders in her replies to Lord Mariton, and was all but rude to him. The Godfreys soon took her away. They had left her, at her own desire, to pass an hour with Lady Mount-Vernon; and, after visiting the Thomsons and the Westerns, whose places in this neighbourhood you know, they returned to take her up. . . . Whatever my sister, or Lady Barbara thought, they disclosed no suspicion respecting the state of her heart, but in perfect unison resounded

her praise, which Mariton echoed with idolatrous grimaces and contortions. You may depend upon it, he is desperately in love; and you have no right to be angry with him for having eyes as well as you: the truth is, that he is not above the level of the herd, and that instead of being an ornament to his title, his title is his chief ornament. Miss Saville's discernment should have been enough to set you at your ease with respect to him; but since that is not sufficient, have patience to go through what I have to write, and you shall have more vulgar inducements.

A day or too after this, I rode over to Manor House, and observed the change in Miss Saville which I have mentioned, and which I could not but attribute then, and still do, to the effects produced on her feelings that day at Mount-Vernon. I naturally made the observation of a change to Godfrey, and found it had struck them all, but very free from my attributions. Considerable uneasiness was the consequence, and Godfrey, as I told you, proposed at dinner

the excursion to Bath ; Mr. Saville, as he seconded the motion, saying, " Vernon, you must go with us." — *Vous concevez bien*, that I did not want much pressing on the occasion. The only question was, what was to be done with the ball for Christmas eve ? It did not require a debate ; after a short conversation across the table, it was agreed, that the whole affair, decorations, taste and all, should be left to the experience of the housekeeper and butler, who were to receive such friends as had been invited to come a day or two before and take their beds in the house, if the master and mistress were not at home in time to do the honours of hospitality themselves ; and that, if Miss Saville was not better in the course of a week, the ball should be put off altogether, and apologies written to the company invited. Thank Heaven ! Miss Saville was better in the course of the very first day, and, before the end of the probationary week, was as well as ever she was in her life, and more beautiful than ever.

Something of our story at Bath you will naturally expect of me. Miss Saville was the only one of the party to whom that city was new, and she admired it much. She observed that the Italians, as far as she had yet been able to judge, surpassed us in the magnificence of their edifices, their churches, and their palaces, but that for moderate domestic habitations, cleanliness, and comfort, she had seen no town in any part of the world which could at all compare with Bath. The baths, the public rooms, the assemblage of company from every part of the kingdom, excited her admiration. Having cordially expressed all she felt in approbation of the town, she with equal candour owned that she was struck with one effect of its being a popular rendezvous, which she could not but think was to be lamented, that was, it was a centre of attraction for all the loungers of the kingdom, a character painful to contemplate, as well as dangerous to virtue; not that this was more the character of Bath than that of every other such rendezvous. And the fact, Darrell, is, that the Vortex

is generally peopled with loungers, and beings that have nothing to do but amuse themselves. I think she was rather fastidious on the subject; however, it is certain that she unconsciously marked to her cousin with displeasure some persons, who, I knew, only preserved their places in company by means of the *Spartan virtue*. Above all, she could not bear the personal exposure of our Vortical ladies. I have seen her look at her cousin with a kind of reflected shame, when she has found herself near any of those *Nudes* of the Vortex; — and to the Vortex, I believe, they peculiarly belong: indeed I must own this Vortical exposure, which classes women in their taste and appearance with the abandoned, is always considered among us as the signal of unprotected virtue. On the whole, she admired Bath.

But I must not confine myself to telling you how she admired; — I must change to the passive voice, and tell you how she was admired: though you will imagine this better than I should paint



it, yet even your imagination must be allowed its full scope to come near the fact. Were I to dwell upon all that happened, and all that was asked and said, my letter, already long, would not come to an end this week, and I have yet much to add. Vortical subjects in mass I must leave behind at Bath, where our whirling friends generally *conglomerate* about Christmas. You would be astonished at the variety of personages constitutional and professional that enter the system. We have not only Vortical loungers, like myself, but Vortical statesmen, Vortical legislators, Vortical lawyers, Vortical physicians, Vortical surgeons, Vortical divines, — these are in general, the evangelical Rufus's friends — Vortical hunters, Vortical farmers, Vortical brewers, Vortical actors, Vortical musicians, authors, philosophers, soldiers, sailors, lords and ladies of all ranks, matrons and spinsters of all ages, twirling away; and, as the crowd moves round, it is perpetually attracting new, thoughtless subjects :

*" The gathering number as it moves along,  
Involves a vast involuntary throng."*

all in pursuit of the fascinating IDOL,  
whose *bells* mark her circle, and lead them  
on to

*" Roll in her vortex, and her power confess."*

Among those whom we left at Bath, you may be sure I was not a little pleased to include the Bramblebears; — they arrived the day before we set out on our return to Herefordshire. It had a better effect than all the mineral waters in the world could have had, and if any thing was wanting to the complete restoration of our patient's spirits, as well as her general health, here we had it.

One of the Vortex we brought away, — for one, notwithstanding your exclusion of him, my friend Rufus undoubtedly is, evangelically, though no divine. I found him in the pump-room, discoursing to a group of Vortical females in scriptural phraseology, than which nothing can be more injurious to the Scriptures. I believe he left them in the middle of a sentence to fly to us, and such transfu-

sions ! He hinted so plainly, then begged so hard to spend a few of the holidays with us, that not to indulge him was impossible, though I fear the poor devil will long repent the freak ; but more of this anon.

Before I proceed, my dear Darrell, I will attend as seriously as I can, or rather as I ought, to the state of your disease, for by my skill in *nosology*, after some doubt whether it was *syncope* or *palpitation*, I am clearly of opinion it is a compound genus, belonging to different orders, but of the same class, to wit, *neuroses*, and that it requires a light treatment ; we must, therefore, fall upon some means of removing the impediment you are sensible of, to your taking the pleasant dose I prescribed for you, and a better cannot be. I have again been studying your case in your last letter, and my opinion of the nature of it is completely confirmed. It is unnecessary to enumerate all the new confirming symptoms ; the grand obstruction in the *œsophagus*, in plain English, is nothing more than a lump in the throat, an hys-

terical ball, more common to be sure in female subjects. *They* take drops of ether; *you* shall have ethereal draughts: this is a medicine that will make its way in spite of all lumps. Dear Darrell, if I leave this strain for another, it must be to vent rage. Here is bliss, bliss unparalleled, meeting you, and there are you curvetting and skipping from one side of the road to the other to let it go by. I do think you are mad. Corruption and horror! Zounds! I ~~am~~ help swearing. And what is this corruption and this horror? I don't want you to tell me *particulars*; — I can tell you *generals*, which you know contain particulars. — A girl breaks her heart for a boy: — to dissipate chagrin, he plunges into follies, called by the grave ones vices: — hence a tremendous character. This is your *corruption* and *horror*, I have no doubt. Well now; allowing it, have not you suffered enough to wash it away? Don't you declare yourself a sincere penitent? — you are half a Christian already. Talk as you will, you never were in love before. Love is the passion

of a man ; in a child it is an affection without judgment ; it is too mighty for a half-grown heart. It may be sweet and something like it, but it is not LOVE ; — not such a passion as at this moment fills and expands your heart for *your Augusta*. What words ! How unexpectedly did they flash upon your eye ! Yes, *your Augusta*. — Yours — that is, if you please, Sir Francis, no compulsion being intended. Darrell, you say, you will never marry her ; — she says the same of you ; the meaning of which, in our mother-tongue, is, that you are both determined to go a great way round to come at last to your destination, all to avoid a style or two in the short cut, which I am ready to help you over. The truth is you are a couple of congeeing folks, perpetually *how-d'ye-do-ing* and *good-bye-ing*

“ And now you salute her with congee profound,  
Then her ladyship curtsies half way to the ground.”

Now this is all very fine, but to my mind it is neither so natural, nor so pleasant as Lady Bab's plump, “ Come, my dear, let's kiss and be friends.”

In giving me credit for my *gaieté de cœur*, my dear Darrell, I know you think me incapable of indulging it wantonly, while you are suffering seriously. I received your letter only on the evening previous to the ball at Manor-House. I believe I read it with an emotion almost, if not altogether, equal to yours when you wrote it. I read it again the next morning, and it left a very serious impression upon my mind, one that would be the most painful I ever received in my life, if it were not accompanied with a hope that your good sense will interpose, and assist me in determining you to combat and to conquer the monsters of your imagination, monsters more dangerous than the paw of the lion or of the bear. Real evils may be overcome, but the shadowy evils of the brain defy the utmost skill of man. If I jest upon your feelings, my friend, it is with the view of reducing them to the proper standard of human nature, and to prevent that elevation of mind, which tends to exalt you beyond it, from rising to an exaltation of the brain. I entreat you to

listen to me with patience, both when I am serious and when I jest. I am most serious now in telling you that you are in danger of the most dreadful horrors, if you do not get rid of those imaginary ones with which you clothe some boyish acts, and from which it is incumbent upon you to deliver your mind. You say, you "would never be accepted *if known*," and that you "cannot bear the thought of being accepted *not known*." I agree with you in the latter part of this sentence, but not in the former. I am sure that nothing which you can possibly have to disclose would sway the sentiment of such a woman as Miss Saville: but put it out of doubt. You will remind me that you would once have done this, and that she rejected the confidence. That is no good argument. She could not, with delicacy, have done otherwise at the time, or even now, as circumstances stand: but there is an obvious way of obtaining her ear to all that you would impart. Solicit her hand. You must do this, and soon, or you ought, in honour, to think of her no more.

I know that the place you occupy in her mind excludes at present every other man ; you are, therefore, bound, my friend, to take a decisive part, either to lock the chain upon her heart, or let her be convinced that it ought to be thrown off.

You desire of my imagination to create you a man worthy of her, and to baptize him, that you may consent to her blessing him. Now, though such a creation as you ask for requires only something of a poetical fancy, neither the creation nor the christening is necessary : a little moulding is all that is wanted, and his name is Francis. The moulding work, I own, I find rather difficult ; but if you will give me a hand heartily, we shall soon complete the figure most worthily, and then we will have his *Worthiness* blessed with all possible dispatch. I see that I am running into levity too soon again. Then, all trifling apart, I will now, before I attempt to amuse you, seriously consider your letter, and seriously perform the office of friendship. I will not lose time in convincing you, that



you are in love. You already own it yourself in spite of your unintelligible distinction of never combining the image of your mistress with the idea of marriage. Another acknowledged fact is, that you would give the world to possess the esteem and affection of her friends. The possession of such love as hers, and of such friendship as theirs, would be, beyond doubt, the summit of human felicity. I take upon me to say, that it is in your reach. You do not expect to hear that Miss Saville has been so weak as to declare such an attachment, nor would I have her suppose that I know her heart so well as I do. Darrell, she loves you : but she is not one of those damsels that lose their hearts. She has not lost her heart ; she never will lose it. I am convinced she will give it to you, if you will but choose to beg it. She is one of those who can love what appears lovely, but who can, uninjured, withdraw affection on being undeceived. She speaks of you with a zeal, which, I well see, covers love, but also with a prudence which satisfies herself

her heart upon  
inds that you are  
whom she *ought* to  
the pleasure of con-  
frequently, and some-  
rarely, alone. I have  
opportunity of speaking of  
when I could do it without a  
raying my drift. I am a little  
doing this : it confirms my place  
good graces, for I won't give you  
the merit of her favour, and makes me  
*ably* agreeable, for there is no topic so  
agreeable to her. Now, my life on't,  
you will upbraid me with unkindness, or  
indolence, or I know not what, for not  
writing out all our conversations in re-  
gular dialogues ; Vernon, Augusta, Ver-  
non, Augusta, through a whole quire of  
large post :

VERNON. A cold morning, Miss  
Saville.

AUGUSTA. Very, indeed.

VERNON. Where's Mrs. Godfrey.

AUGUSTA. She has a head-ach this  
morning.

VERNON. I am sorry for it — I will send her some *eau de Cologne* — some that Darrell brought from Paris.

AUGUSTA. Does Sir Francis recommend it?

VERNON. To rub the temples when the head aches.

AUGUSTA. Will you fill my bottle also?

*Finis dialogi.*

Godfrey came in, and thus ended a dialogue, which contains more solid argument in proof of a soul than you have found in the *Phædon* you have been studying. — But again to be serious : I cannot give you all the little symptomatic traits that daily occur ; but, though out of its order, you shall here have one which to me is decisive. I was puzzled how to deliver your note to her. I wished to see the effect, but I did not wish others to observe it. I knew she would read it to her cousin, but, had I given it before her, it would have been in such a manner as not to produce any visible effect — if done alone, I could indulge my

design suddenly. I had an opportunity of the latter. — Leaving Rufus to Lady Bab, if he should appear before I returned, which I had some reason to doubt, I rode over on the morning of the ball to Manor-house — I found her in her cousin's little book-room playing on the sofa with Caroline. I put a good deal of eagerness in my manner.

“Miss Saville,” said I, “I have rode over myself from Mount-Vernon, with a letter for you.”

“From Lady Mount-Vernon?”

“Oh no, from Darrell.”

I could at that moment have knocked my head against the wall, for daring to witness so tell-tale a sensation. She would have hidden it. I hope she thinks that she did. If she had not been sitting, I think she would have fallen as if shot, by the suddenness of my manner. As it was, she threw her face upon Caroline, and rubbed it on her little neck, as if in continuation of their play, which to be sure the child was courting; but I caught a sight of the blood rushing to her face before she could bury it between the

neck and the shoulder of the sweet laughing little girl, who looked like a Love fondled by one of the Graces. — But, though she could thus avert her features, she could not conceal the colour on her neck, so deep was the tinge produced by the name I had pronounced.

“ I beg your pardon, Mr. Vernon, this little rogue — ”

She went on, Caroline laughing the while, till she thought she was sufficiently relieved of her rosy hue, to show me her face, when she again begged pardon, and made the best of it, which I helped her to do, being as unconcerned and unobservant as she could wish. I suffered the delay of her reply to rest with the little girl, and presented the cover of your letter.

“ It is directed to you,” said she, “ and open.”

“ It is a short note,” replied I, “ written on the envelope of a letter to me. He says it is for you.”

On reading it, not the slightest confusion remaining on her countenance, she smiled, and said : —

"This is very delightful, Mr. Vernon ; if Sir Francis could know what real pleasure it has given me, it would perhaps be some gratification to him, for I believe he honours me with his esteem. Will you have the goodness to assure him that I am truly happy to hear of his progress, and that I feel much obliged and flattered?"

"I certainly will, if you please," said I, "but his gratification would be heightened, if your pleasure were expressed in an answer to the note, under your own hand."

"I believe," replied she, "that I must consider the note, though directed to you, addressed to me."

"Clearly," said I.

I firmly believe she danced less at night, by two dances at least, in consequence of receiving this note in the morning. Yesterday she gave me her answer, which you *will find* enclosed — *will find!* as if it was not read the first thing and kissed a dozen times, before you began with my letter!

But to be serious again, for I do somehow naturally slide out of the serious, which proves I was born for the Vortex, unless by a dilemma it may be proved that the Vortex has generated my levity — But to be serious, my dear Darrell. — In the face of demonstration you are doubting, and frittering away happiness. — *Your* impediment you can, and must get rid of; you *must* be worthy of her. — You *are* worthy of her; your feelings prove it. You must confess yourself to her, and my life on't she will absolve you. — *Her* impediment must also be got rid of: but I fear it is of a more insurmountable nature, and I find it less easy to advise you. It is her declared determination not to marry a man who is not a Christian, of course she cannot connect you with the idea of marriage. I can only repeat seriously what I said jestingly in a former letter, I would have you do as all men of all religions do, and nothing more I believe is required — convince yourself, as far as you can, and take the rest upon trust. I have banished those subjects from my thoughts

long, but that is what I would do, if I were to take them up again; and I certainly would take them up again, if I had such incitement to the study. You have already made an extraordinary progress, such a one as has awakened some desire in me to see how you have brought it about — but zooks! it is not time for me to think yet — the lively Vortex does not lose its charm at four-and-twenty: let those think who cannot dance; let those reason who cannot laugh. There are two epochas in a man's life, when he ought to begin to think: the one is when he is going to be married; and the other, when he is going to die. What use is there in thinking till one or other of these epochas? Now one of your epochas is at hand, and you are properly occupied. I can't direct you in mysterious matters, or I would most willingly; but I think your mistress could give you some hints that you might improve, and I shall wind up this serious part of my letter by advising you, by conjuring you, to declare your feelings to her, and let her reply be your guide how



to act. You will have no peace till you do this.

And now I think I may go back to my friend Rufus, whom I left under Lady Bab's protection, when I rode over with your note to Manor-House in the morning of the day of the ball. He is a sinner, every inch, soul and body. — He is rapidly quitting all reserve with me — I once said to you that I thought of making a sinner of him ; he was ready made to my hand ; he only wanted a little drilling to make him sin like a gentleman. His leer is abominably *parlante*. I absolutely blush at times when I observe it, but it is all ascribed by the ladies to his evangelical transfusing : I think he is making love to three at once, Lady Mount-Vernon, La Belle, and her cousin. He has been trying to convert the last, and has actually consulted me upon the possibility of a Christian marrying a Papist, assuring me that it is his only objection to offering himself to the young lady, and hoping that the light of reason might remove it. They seem to have forgotten or forgiven his taste for statues, after a successful

essay he made in the pump-room at Bath to recover himself; for when he eyed us, I clearly saw that the *silk-stocking day* was on his mind, and that he doubted his reception by the ladies. Their "how-do-you-do Mr. Palmer," revived him, and he patted me on the shoulder, saying, as he pointed to the figure of Beau Nash :

" That was the patron of the place and a man of true taste, and you see he has his clothes on. This is the resort of people of the finest taste, and yet you see they don't take his clothes off; tell me no more, my friend Mr. Vernon, of Praxitiles and Canova; their beautiful, vile works ought to be kept in their proper places, in long galleries and dark museums, and not erected along public roads to annoy modest passengers, and scandalize our *pure religion*. — "

Here he squinted or leered at Miss Saville.

" Yes, I say our pure religion, which admits of no statues or images, clothed or not clothed. — I understand you," said

he, seeing me bend my brows, "I am talking of Beau Nash."

Conceiving from my look that he was on forbidden ground, he lost his train of thought, and brought himself up with putting us in mind that he was talking of the figure before us, and he came to a dead halt. There was a smile round our party, but it was one of kindness and pity, not of contempt—the very show of religion and virtue was enough with these kind hearts to ward off the last; and they thought, what was the fact, that his object was to atone for his error, and remove any unfavourable impression his simplicity might have made—this was enough for them. But the rogue did not deserve their lenity. It was an outward and interested act. As they walked on I kept him back by the arm, and said, "Don't you see, why the statuary did not undress Beau Nash?"

"I protest, I don't," replied he, looking up at the Beau.

"Look again."

He looked.

"I did not think you so dull, Rufus," said I; "can you tell why the ancient Greek and modern Italian sculptors gave their gods and goddesses slight or no drapery?"

"No doubt," replied he leering, "to show the beauty of the figure."

"Now," said I, "look at Beau Nash—don't you think they did right to clothe him?"

"Yes, yes," said he, laughing out, and sporting wit, "I see clearly that the beauty of a beau is in his clothes; but one must conform to please, and I am very sure, that neither Mrs. Godfrey nor her handsome cousin would visit Kitty and Miss Palmer, if I had left the Venus in the grove."

"Why, what have you been doing with your statues, Rufus?"

"They cost me too much," quoth Rufus, "to think of destroying them—you have not an idea of the expence, so I let the Faunus and the Water-Nymph stay in their places, by the advice of Hamilton, and only removed the Venus."

"Pity!" cried I, "and where have you put her?"

"Safe enough," said he, "where only those may see her, who have an antique taste—in the oval recess of my study, where she stands most elegantly—the recess positively seemed made for her; and I have had a nice green Persian curtain fixed on a brass rod to slide occasionally before the recess. You have not an idea how the study is improved by it.—Libraries are proper places for statues."

"Was that Hamilton's taste or yours?"

"My own truly," cried he; "positively, my own."

"I thought so," said I; "I was sure you had an antique taste ever since that morning that Martha caught you in the washhouse taking away the flannel petticoat."

Here Rufus transfused ideas—he would not speak, being mindful of his friend Hamilton's *tarpe dictu*. He moved as he leered, and, joining the ladies, renewed his demureness, and his sanctified phraseology. One such evangelical hy-

poerite does more harm to the truths that may be found in the Bible than a dozen freethinkers. I shall keep him up a little longer, and then expose him to the God-freys. He has met with a ridiculous accident, the account of which will come in here very well. It was this that enabled me to leave him in the hands of Lady Bab, who, by-the-bye, is not so much taken in by him as my sister and our other friends. It was a fortunate accident for you, whatever it was for him, as, if he could have sat on a horse, he would have accompanied me to Manor-House, and spoiled that delicious blush which was destined to send your blood in rapid waves *pulsing* to your heart.

The frost had set in very sharply before we left Bath, and still continues severe. — On the day we arrived, the housemaid was ordered to see the room prepared for Rufus well aired, and to warm his bed at night. He was in high spirits at the reception he met with, particularly from Lady Mount-Vernon; and at night before we separated, he took his glass of brandy and water, in the mix-

ture of which I observed that the crystal of the water had not much attenuated the amber colour of the brandy, and I presumed that he was preparing for a sound sleep. Whether it began to have a soporific effect before he meant it should, or from some other cause, I don't know, but Rufus retired the first, and nearly half an hour before we separated. Lady Mount-Vernon and Bab were gone, and I had sent off Lord Mariton and Aspell, who had beds with us for the night, to their respective apartments. My brother remained below talking to his man, and I was marching up stairs to my chamber, when I met the housemaid running down in a fright. As soon as she saw me, she cried out

“ Oh! Sir! Oh, Mr. Vernon.”

“ What ails the girl?” — said I.

“ Oh! Sir! the gentleman — the gentleman —”

“ What gentleman?”

“ The tall, slim, fair, red-headed gentleman.”

“ What of him?”

"Oh! Sir, I have warmed him — the warming-pan" —

"What the deuce do you mean, child?"

"It was quite a mistake. — Oh dear Sir, I shall never forgive myself if I have injured him. — I have warmed him, Sir. Pray think of my Lady's salve —" and away she darted on hearing Rufus roar.

I flew to his room, which was contiguous to mine. There he was, standing by a fire going out in his shirt, which he held off behind that it might not touch him. The maid had left her candle on the floor as she went in, and, unconscious of Rufus's danger, she had made more use of her hands than her eyes in untucking the clothes at the foot of the bed, and had rapidly inserted the dire machine.

Curled up by the cold like a dog on a rug, and set asleep by the brandy, the fire-charged pan came in contact with the roundest part of poor Rufus's body, and produced a roar, which Miss Broom took for a ghost; and she fled, leaving the mischievous instrument unextricated to its vengeance, and not recollecting till



she met me, that her fancied ghost might be the red-headed gentleman. There, sure enough, in the bed stuck the warming-pan; there at the door was the candle, and there at the dying fire stood the dismayed, groaning Rufus. I cannot help laughing at the recollection, as the worst is over, for it was serious at the time — but being over we may as well laugh.

“My dear fellow,” said I, “what’s the matter?”

“Oh oh-h!”

“Let me see, pray —”

“Oh-h-h! Don’t touch it.”

Upon examining the hurt, I found it was no serious injury; on which I said;

“It must be touched.”

“Oh!” cried he, “not for the world.”

“I know what will ease the pain,” said I, recollecting the maid’s advice to think of her Lady’s salve.

Seeing it was only a little smarting, I would again have recommended *Eau de Cologne*, but I had too tender a heart, so I said;

“My dear Rufus, stand just as you are till I come back.”

“I will,” said he; “make haste.”

It was intensely cold, and I stirred the fire for him before I left him. — While I was doing it, I wickedly asked him if he thought Lord Mariton or Aspell could be of any service; if so, I would bring them back with me.

“For Jesus’ sake, don’t,” said he, and groaned.

“Be easy then,” said I. — “I won’t; and they shan’t even know what has happened.”

“Thank you! — make haste.”

I found Mount-Vernon still in the room below — he had heard of something being the matter, and hearing that I was with the red-headed gentleman, he was staying to know what it was. — He was sorry, but could not help laughing. The waiting-women were with their ladies.

“Go yourself to Bab’s door,” said Mount-Vernon, “and ask her for some salve.”

I took the hint.

“Bab,” said I, knocking at her door, “I want to speak to you; I know you are not in bed yet.”

The door opened on a jar, and out

popped Barbara's pleasant, round, ruddy face, surmounted with a man's double cotton night-cap. She knew something had happened.

"What's the matter, what's the matter?" cried she.

"More than you are aware of," replied I, with a serious face.

Bab opened the door, and came forward at the impulse of curiosity — she was in a flannel wrapping-gown.

"Come, now, tell me what's the matter, Lewy?"

"My dear Bab — I'll tell you to-morrow, but do, for Heaven's sake, give me some salve for the present."

"Tell me now," said she.

"One of the maids," said I, "has burnt poor Palmer almost to death."

"Law! How did she manage that?" quoth Bab.

"I can't stay telling you all the particulars now — do give me some salve."

"I will, if I have any — but, law! Lewy, how, and where, and with what is he burnt?"

"If I tell you these, will you give me the salve without asking any more questions?"

"Law ! to be sure."

"How?"

"Grievously."

"What with?"

"A warming-pan."

"Where?"

"I'll tell you to-morrow — do, give me the salve."

"Go along — what do you talk to me about salve for; I have got no salve — go, and ask Lady Mount-Vernon; she has got plenty; I never keep any. — What should I do with it?"

"This is cruel of you, Bab."

"Pho! you fool! tell him to put a handful of salt in a bason of cold water, and use that."

She laughed and, retreating, slapped the door in my face. Mount-Vernon, who stood out of sight listening, with difficulty restrained his laughter till this dialogue was over; he then got some salve for me from his wife, and we both repaired to Rufus's chamber to relieve and comfort him. When he saw my brother, he did not know what to do with himself. — There he stood as I left

him, like his own Callipyges, as motionless, but not so devoid of sensation, still protecting the injured part from the touch of the linen that hung over it. Mount-Vernon said he was very sorry for the accident.

“ Truly, my Lord, it is to be deplored.”

“ Vernon tells me that it will soon be well.”

“ It is to be hoped, my Lord, but I must say it was a wicked deed in the young Jezebel, who could not but have seen me ; — I hope she will be properly punished — but I am in great pain.”

He was evidently so at the moment, and therefore we could not then make it a subject of pleasantry. I spread the salve on some rag, and bound it on him ; it gave him immediate relief. We said what we could to comfort him, and got him to bed.

The next was an awful morning to poor Rufus. He had had little sleep during the night ; less, as he confessed, from pain, than from reflecting on the position he should stand in at Mount-Vernon and Manor-House. I went to him as soon as I was up. My knocking at his door woke him ; I found him well enough to laugh and to be laughed at,

though sore. Having advised him to sleep another hour, and take his breakfast in his room, I was going to leave him to his rest, when he called me back.

"My good friend," said he, "do you think the thing will be known to the ladies?"

The occasion was irresistible.

"How shall we prevent it?" said I.  
"Are you so free of pain as not to betray it in walking?"

"I will bear any pain rather than it should be known to the ladies — though I feel some in one place where the skin is broken."

"Oh, as for that," said I, "the salve will completely heal it before night; you must dance."

"Oh! I *must* dance, if its only to show it's no such thing."

"That something is the matter it will be impossible to conceal. How shall we hide the place? The rag was got from the housekeeper, and the salve from Lady Mount-Vernon herself."

"Can't we put it all upon my thumb?"

"Let me look — a happy thought — but how came your thumb so burnt?"

"Why the jade left the pan in the bed, and I put my hand down to poke it away, but I was obliged to jump out at the bolster."

"Come, this is lucky — they say every evil has some good attending it ; — this is a lucky burn of the thumb ; we may now call the unfortunate part the thumb — go to sleep now ; I'll come and see you after breakfast."

"Thank you," quoth he ; "but I say, had not we better bind some rag about the thumb?"

"Yes, certainly."

"And," cried he, with a smile, "we will get a thumb-stall for night."

"Good bye," said I.

"But as to that girl," said he, "who has got me into this scrape, I do hope your brother the Lord will make a point of turning her away. — I would have her whipped at the cart's tail."

"Oh! my friend," said I, "it was an accident."

"An accident, Mr. Vernon! Damn her, she did it on purpose."

This was the first time I had heard the emphatic verb *damn* out of Rufus's mouth

— but it is one of the properties of familiarity to withdraw the veil that covers the heart of a hypocrite, and I neither thought the better nor the worse of him for it. The fellow's pretension to peculiar purity in a religion of which *forgiveness* is the basis — and, by the bye, the very best argument in favour of its truth, which, Darrell, you may keep in mind in your studies — had shown me his character before : — this want of mercy only added the view of a vindictive spirit, and I determined to make him suffer for it.

“ The girl,” said I, “ is to be turned away this morning, if she is not gone already. — Now, Rufus, if she is not gone, my opinion is, that you had better beg for her.”

“ Beg for her, Mr. Vernon ; beg for the fire-shoving monster that singed me !”

“ Not for her sake,” replied I ; “ she deserves to be broiled herself ; but don't you see what will be the consequence to you ?”

“ Consequence,” quoth he, “ from a slut like that !”

“ She,” said I, “ knows all ; and, if



pushed to extremities, she will certainly tell all, and there will be no hiding it from the ladies."

"Eh! what?"

"Besides, my good friend," continued I, "there's no knowing how far the matter will go. — There are ballad-makers in every town; at Hereford I know two — nothing so easy — for instance, off-hand:

Though cruel his heart, his complexion was fair,  
His stature was lofty, and red was his hair;  
This beau, who from Hampshire to dancing was come,  
Took a horror to Molly for burning his thumb.

"Lord! oh Lord!" exclaimed Rufus.

I went on.

"You are a poet yourself, and know that where *your* taste would be an hour adopting a rhyme, the journeymen poets do off hundreds by habit, never much caring about the delicacy of the jingle, and, unfortunately for you, a thumb-stall won't hide a rhyme, and there are so many to fit your case."

Poor Rufus was in an agony of trans-  
fusion.

"Shall I," continued I, "convince

you, by giving you another stanza off-hand."

"By no means, my friend — I *am* convinced — fly, I beseech you to my worthy lord, and intercede in the strongest terms you can use for poor Molly — tell him from me, that forgiveness is a Christian duty, and that I forgive her — do, run, do."

"I fear," said I, "it is too late, but I will do my best — meanwhile do you get some sleep, and, by repose and composure through the day, get yourself in proper cue for the ball; — you must absolutely dance to-night with Mrs. Godfrey, Miss Saville, and Lady Bab." I had got out of the room, and was shutting the door, when I heard him bawl out —

"For Jesus' sake! not Lady Bab."

I found Mount-Vernon, my sister, and Lady Barbara, at the breakfast-table — Lord Mariton and Aspell were frost-bound in bed —

"'Pon my word," said I, as I entered the room, "that poor fellow Palmer has hurt his thumb prodigiously."

"Choke your impudence," cried Bab,

“ what business had you to come to me for salve ?”

I swore that Mount-Vernon sent me — he that he never told me that Bab used salve; both of us telling truth like *Æsop's* two thieves. Lady Mount-Vernon asking seriously how he did, I made them all easy by assuring her that there was no harm done, and that I left him talking of the ball, and picking and chusing his partners. Bab laughed, but ended with saying :

“ An't you ashamed now to play anybody such a trick as that ?”

I was surprised by the sudden expression of this suspicion, though on a moment's reflection I did not wonder at her entertaining it ; — and as I saw my sister's hope in her face, that it was not my contrivance, I thought it necessary to disavow it formally, and to convince her of its being completely accidental. She thanked me in her sweet, gracious manner, as if she were obliged to me, for its not being premeditated under her roof. — She is a most amiable creature. The conversation ended with our resolving to

favour the demonstration of the thumb-stall. You may suppose that, on Rufus's appearance, it was not easy for Bab to preserve her *serieux* : — as for me, though I was bound not to 'peach, I was not bound not to laugh. On this score, however, the day went off very well for Rufus ; but he was ridiculously precise, and once was venturing on an atonement for following *my* task in sculpture, similar to his essay on Beau Nash, which I put a stop to by asking him if there was not a recess in his study at Hants Cottage.

In the evening we set out in proper time for Manor-House. The Mount-Vernons, Lady Barbara, and Lord Mariton in the coach ; Aspell, Rufus, and I in the chariot. Rufus had managed very well at dinner to appear at his ease, and all the necessary compliments and condolences were paid to his *thumb*, for which Molly, out of gratitude for his intercession, or rather in penitence for her wicked fire-shoving precipitation — she being of the intercession as ignorant as the warming-pan, which had done the mischief — had provided a very handsome

black silk case, which she herself, while begging and receiving pardon, had gently fixed upon the thumb, and tied round his wrist in a handsome bow of black ribbon ; but when he came to get into the chariot, the ease was not so clearly assumed. — Placing him and Aspell in the corners, I took the middle : — I no sooner sat down than he gave a loud, *Oh !*

“ What’s the matter, Sir ? ” cried Aspell.

“ Nothing,” replied he, “ only our friend pressed in a little suddenly.”

Aspell could not help laughing, though I declare he knew nothing of the matter, for I had religiously kept contract with Lady Mount-Vernon, whose thanks in the morning I considered as binding. — I put myself forward. — On going on, the motion of the carriage made Rufus bite his lips, accompanied now and then with a gentle, half-smothered *Oh !*, till entering upon the beginning of the first hill, the coachman not immediately abating his speed, I was thrown involuntarily back, and jammed between my companions,

which suddenly forced a loud and lengthened *Oh!* from the suffering one.

"Gently," cried I to the man, recovering my accommodating position.

Aspell turned his head round, and stared at Rufus.

"By the Lord!" exclaimed the latter, "I'd rather walk all the way."

"Why?" asked Aspell.

"Eh!" stammered the wincing youth: "Why? Because I'd rather warm my blood by walking, than perish by cold in this vehicle — o, o, o, o."

By the O's I mean an accompaniment to shuddering and chattering of teeth, to blind Aspell. Upon walking, up *the hill* at least, he was determined, till I reminded him that he had his dancing shoes on. He then bethought him of requesting to be made bodkin, and he took my place. He rode the rest of the way comparatively in Heaven, using the glass straps as a purchase, by means of which he managed to humour his posture the rest of the way.

The Ball! — I shall not keep you long in pumps — I wish to Heaven you had

yours on, and more profitably studying heavenly truths, in the steps of *your* AUGUSTA, all life, than in the despotic interrogations of Xantippe's ugly husband, all death and poison. It was a very pleasant ball in spite of the sharpness of the frost, the nipping of which was suspended in the rooms by large fires, constant motion, and good spirits — animal ones, I mean. Lady Bab never touches brandy, except that of her hunting pocket-flask on raw mornings, when the hounds lose scent. To hope that you will read on in the order I write, I must consent to write in the order you will read.

Well then — SHE — not Lady Bab — was all that you can imagine of beauty, and a thousand times more than I can picture. This must do for her person; and as for her white satin bodice, and gauze skirt, the plaits on her head, the shoes on her feet, the silk stocking on her ankle — I must not say leg — the bracelet on her arm, and the cross on her breast, all the innumerable episodic embellishments of beauty, I must thus

leave lumped, to come with but half the speed you require to the point, of how she did not happen to dance with Lord Mariton — and here in spite of your impatient forecast, in justice to my friend Rufus, — now don't damn him — remember your studies, and if you don't damn him before, I am sure you won't after — I have done him the justice to demand your eternal friendship for him in future, which you will give him as readily as you would at this moment give me a box on the ear, when you know your eternal obligation to him, for to him is due the praise and gratitude for HER not dancing with your compound of fop, loungee, and lord — and now for the “by what means?”

Some of the beaux of the ball were staying at Manor-House, and SHE was engaged five deep, when we arrived. — We had the start of the coach, and the first thing Rufus did, on entering the room, was to make his way, as soon as he got a glimpse of her, in a direct line, as fast as he could, in a half hobble, half frisk, to engage her; and he had the hap-



piness of being nominated the sixth of her *chevaliers*. I, less active than *your* friend, not having been wounded, only managed to secure the seventh, and Aspell was the fortunate eighth — but, as it turned out, we had not the *bliss* of dancing with her, for in came my lord, and he came in too for the ninth promise of dancing felicity. As the night advanced the happy candidates were scotched off one after another, and it was fast approaching to Rufus's turn, who had danced one dance with La Belle, and having suffered not a little for his gallantry, was reserving himself entirely for his *sixth* with Miss Saville, on whom, in spite of my *other attractions*, I kept my eye. I found her sitting out now and then when she ought to have been dancing. I divined that the protracting of her engagements was the motive : — I saw too that, with every politeness, she disliked and avoided Lord Mariton.

At length came Rufus's turn. — I observed his perturbation between the thoughts of his approaching honour, and the dread of what it doomed him to suf-

fer. He made his bow at the appointed epocha, and offered to lead her to her place.

"Will you allow me," said she, "to sit out this dance?"

"Gladly! — I mean, certainly," replied Rufus, whose features as well as his *gladly* plainly betokened a reprieve.

"Have you hurt your thumb, Mr. Palmer?" said she, observing Molly's silk case.

"An accident — a trifling wound. —"

"He spoke to her, but he gazed at me, who was standing at her side, over-preserving my gravity, the exertion for which he saw in my eyes, and by some convulsions of my cheeks, on which he looked, "for Jesus' sake!" as much as if he had spoke the words.

"How happened it?" said she.

Conceive what a question — Rufus never moved his eyes from mine, and could not move his tongue to her. I would have helped him, to please my sister, but I was obliged to desert him: — I must have laughed out-right if I had at-

tempted to speak. He was relieved by that dear woman, who said —

“ He burned it accidentally in his room.”

If Lady Bab had been by, instead of Lady Mount-Vernon, I should not have spared him — and when I think of his pretended sanctity, and his determined revenge on the maid, he does not deserve mercy. The conversation changed, and he got off then, but not through the night.

“ How goes the thumb, Mr. Palmer ?” met his ears now and then, with a significant look from Mount-Vernon — and Bab was wicked enough to make kind enquiries about it, and to advise his not enflaming it by dancing too much, — an advice he was disposed to take, even at the loss of the honour he had solicited. He was happy to hear his partner propose giving up a second and a third dance. More and more convinced of her motive, I rather thought of promoting her design than of urging my claim, which ranked next. — Supper was over, and still Rufus was her partner, and truly happy

I believe he was to hear her declare she wished to be excused dancing more.

"By all means," said he.

"Answer for yourself, my friend," said I; "I can only consent, if those after me do not take advantage of my consent, and I'll determine that directly."

She thanked me, but without knowing how much I deserved it. I went to Aspell and Mariton; the former hastened to declare his resignation himself: — Mariton was sullen.

"Certainly — it was as she pleased — he had no idea of its coming to his turn."

Though she had treated him in every respect as good manners required, he was piqued that he had been able to gain no particular attention from her. He long strove to single her out for the evening; but, all his exertions proving ineffectual, the stream of his passion took a contrary direction, and during the latter part of the night he pointedly avoided her.

I think, Darrell, you are now at your ease with respect to this milk-and-water Lord; and so, I assure you, you may be

as to all the Lords and Commoners of Godfrey's acquaintance, good, bad, and indifferent, that is, for the present. I will repeat it to you : my firm opinion is, that she may be *yours* ; but if you want any more *specific indications*, I own I do not see how they are to be obtained, but by putting the question to herself. We shall now soon be in town, and I trust you will not persist in secluding yourself from our society.

This immense volume of a letter calls loudly for a conclusion, or I could yet amuse you with some of the other characters at Mrs. Godfrey's ball ; — but as to the thing itself ; a ball is a ball, and I could not make more of it. If I had the pleasure of *not* dancing with Miss Saville, I had also the double pleasure of dancing twice with her beautiful, lovely cousin ; no matter : — in most balls, and this was no exception, there is as you know a certain portion of Vortical *Nudes* and *Spartans*. Miss Saville was shocked. — They are out of their places in modest company ; — there they shock even me. — One of the

*Nudes* made a downright attack on Rufus. Her first question to me about him was, "who is the thumb?" —

"A man of fortune near Alton in Hampshire." —

This was enough : — she made a dead set, and the interior of her bosom was as little concealed as the exterior.

And now, adieu ! I think I have left no points of your letter unanswered this time, except perhaps as to reading Plato. The name, though great in most things, has given coinage to an epithet, the idea of which is rather repulsive to my nature. It seems, indeed, to agree with your present humour of being unworthy of any but a Platonic affection from the *Goddess of Love*. Had you chosen the Goddess of Hunting, or even Lady Bab, for such a German passion, there might have been some consistency ; but with such a creature ! I'll read Plato, by-and-bye, when I am rich enough to marry, or if ever I find myself in the humour of the suicide of Utica ; and if neither of these happen before I am tired of the Vortex, I'll begin to re-

vise my Greek when that begins to pall. Seriously, you have inclined me to the study, but I have not virtue enough to set about it just now. — Once more, adieu !

Ever yours,

L. VERNON.

### NOTE

*From Augusta to Sir F. Darrell, in reply to his delivered by Mr. Vernon.*

Miss Saville thanks Sir Francis Darrell for the note delivered to her by Mr. Vernon. — The contents of it cannot but be most agreeable, and are very flattering, to her. Nothing could give her more pleasure than the complete success of Sir Francis in the pursuit which he treats as a *Task* set by her. He has her prayers for it, and also those of her family.

## LETTER XLI.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Mr. Vernon.*

London, Jan.

MY DEAR VERNON,

AFTER losing you so long, I am happy to find you again. I could not divine that my letter was lying unopened on your table at Mount-Vernon, while you were flying about the country; and I cannot but own that I was rather sore at your silence. What sport does Fancy make of human feelings! It is a faculty peculiar to man: nay the metaphysicians tell you that it is not the gift of God, like our other faculties, but a compound made up by himself from some of the others, just as he makes gun-powder by mixing nitre, charcoal, and sulphur; and very similar too they are in their properties. A certain quantity, moderately prepared with learning, but here and there left to itself in the compartments



of the brain, forms those beautiful fireworks we call Poets, Novelists, and Merry-Andrews : — in gross and unprepared, it lets off those destructive detonating explosions which produce madmen and fools : — it delights or destroys.

Mischievous imp ! where could he have got the art of turning pleasure to horror, utility to destruction, good to evil ? Where ? It could not be from his Creator, for God is good : — without goodness there can be no God ; — whatever appearances may say to the contrary, if he *is* at all, he must be good. In this it is not necessary to say *errare malo cum Platone*, it is the dictate of common sense ; and, by-the-bye, there is nothing in Plato to equal the sublimity of the Hebrew laconisms in the book of Genesis. “ And God saw that it was good,” is exquisitely repeated after various acts of creation. — “ Let there be light, and there was light, and He saw that it was *good*.” — “ Let it be, and it was so.” — “ And God saw every thing that he had made, and it was *very*

*good.*” The rapidity of the *FIAT*, and *GOOD*, the immediate effect, surpasses all I have ever met, in the expression of divine grandeur. Nor can it, on reflection, be doubted that what a God creates must be good : — but then, how is reflection contradicted by the senses ! We see, we feel, we know that every thing he has created is *not* good ; — that there is more *evil* than good, and that man, said to be the last and noblest of his terrestrial creation, is a compound of malignity and misery ; that his vice is real, and his virtue imaginary ; that his happiness is momentary and uncertain — his wretchedness certain and sure. What is to be done ? Must I embrace the doctrine of a devil ? In truth I see no alternative : I must either retread my steps, and again lose the God I have found, or I must believe in the devil. I am unwilling to give up the hold I have acquired, but the devil shakes my grasp. I must think. I will tell you more of my studies by-and-bye : at present I will return to the thought, which led to these reflections.

What sport does Fancy make of human feelings! How has it been tossing mine about for the last three weeks! I have connected all possible mishaps and woeful results with your silence. The confirmation of the story of Lady Betty, supported by the newspaper paragraph, which I saw, and which some malignant friend of mine probably aimed at me; the effect at Manor-House; — the advantage to Lord Mariton; his Molly face smirking at the joke; the complacent pity of Lady Mount-Vernon; Lady Barbara's view-hollo; the regret of the Godfreys and Saville; the melancholy conviction of the loveliest of women; and your reluctance to inflict wounds till you could collect some balm to assuage the pain — were the floating ideas of my brain. Other will-o'-the-wisps in the bogs of Fancy, misled me at times different ways, while simple truth lay unheeded before me, and the probability of my letter not having reached you never entered my head. What a dangerous and destructive compound is Fancy! I think it is settled that the discovery of gun-powder, however para-

doxical the assertion seemed at first, has rendered war less murderous ; but with respect to Fancy, the reverse conclusion evidently takes place ; for, since the invention of that Faculty, it has produced infinitely more madmen than poets, though lately, indeed, there seems to be a wonderful press among the fanciful crowd, in rushing into the theatre of life, to avoid the pit of the former, and to mount into the upper gallery of the latter, whence, in their heat and eagerness for places, Fate and Fancy topple them over into their appropriate receptacle.

I have read your delightful letter, my dear Vernon, with the lively and varied sensations it is calculated to excite. Sweet of itself, it was rendered more so by its contrast to my gloomy anticipations. It has relieved me of a great weight ; but I must be ungrateful enough to tell you that it inspires no hope ; — no hope of a happiness you so kindly predestine for me ; of a happiness which even Fancy in her best humour could not parallel. I am not skipping and curvetting out of its way ; — I am not congeeing, or fritter-

ing, or doubting: I tell you seriously, that neither *my* impediment nor *hers* can be removed — yet, for it would be folly to disown it to such a friend, I love, — love as *you* say I do, love to distraction — to distraction, because I love with despair, not with hope.

“ My Augusta ! ” How delightful the sounds ! how impossible to realize them !

I know, Vernon, that you would not blame me, and that most men would so act, if I were to yield me to the delicious colourings of Hope, which your friendly pencil has painted. I should not blame you, or them ; but I have within me an, it may be overweening, principle, that calls imperiously upon me to resist this passion. It is not, my dear Vernon, a Vortical passion raised by selfish, transient pleasure. My question is not, can she make me happy ? but, can she be happy with me ? Alas ! my answer still is — she cannot. Even if all your *indications* of her favourable feelings were acknowledged proofs of love, it is love of an ideal object. To surmount my impediment, she must first hear horrors, and then swear she loves me : — the thought

distracts me ; — the impossibility drives me mad : — “ My Augusta ! ” delicious, empty words ! — “ She will absolve you.” Never : — she will not even hear my confession. Her note — yes, Vernon, I kissed it — might seduce my imagination into a hope that, ignorant of my objections, she would be pleased to have her own removed : — say that mine could be swept away by the feelings of remorse and repentance, which had filled my heart exclusively till I knew her, how is the impediment on her side to be removed ? Shall I deceive her ? tell her that I have faith solvent enough to digest all the miracles of the New Testament ? and the supernumerary ones in the tradition of her own church ?

Your advice is good ; — you say, “ convince yourself as far as you can, and take the rest upon trust.” This, my dear Vernon, is not only a principle as to religious creeds ; it is the principle in belief of every kind. Give me a man of known truth, one incapable of deceiving me ; and I will believe his *unaccountable* assertions ; I will take them

upon trust; but if I hear him utter *contradictory* assertions, I may as well be required to believe that two and two make five, as that he is not an impostor, or out of his senses. Still I must own that some things appear contradictory, which experience shows not to be so. When we are first told that heat hardens wax, and that heat melts wax, it is a contradiction in terms; yet we know that it is the case; that the heat of the sun has the one effect, and the heat of fire has the other. It therefore requires great discrimination in rejecting all that at first appears even contradictory.

But to come to myself. — It does not appear likely that I shall ever surmount these difficulties; and I would sooner die than unite her to falsehood, by professing what I did not think. There is no corruption more hideous than hypocrisy. I know you don't advise this, when you say, "take upon trust," nor that my convictions should be swayed by my passions — they never can — they never shall; it would be courting misery. I am determined to investigate sincerely for my *own sake*, and to endeavour to stifle my pas-

sion for *hers*. But I do not see the necessity of determining so suddenly as you say. — Never be in a hurry ; — always take time : — you are all coming to town. You I shall see daily ; perhaps I may see them once or twice during the winter. How delightful would it be to learn TRUTH from her lips !

I am glad she saw the Bramblebears at Bath. *They* are coming to town about the middle of the month : I shall certainly avoid them as much as possible, and rather than that the idea of an attachment should be revived in the minds of the Godfreys, I will fly into Northamptonshire — to the North Pole, rather than have it revived in that of their cousin.

I read your letter again and again ; I have never received one that gave me half the pleasure. Your incidents, your epithets, the whole style when you speak of Miss Saville, all is calculated to charm. Lady Barbara's barbarous attack is so sweetly defeated by my beautiful champion, and the malice of Mariton by yourself. The hearing of Godfrey's coach a mile off — your ethereal draughts — the



unexpected flash of the electric possessive pronoun coupled with the elegant name of *Augusta* — your moulding me into a being worthy of her — your just delineation of her character, formed with dignity above *losing* her heart, though possessed of tenderness to bestow it — your admirable little Platonic dialogue, proving from *Eau de Cologne* the existence of the soul — and, above all, that BLUSH ! It should have been told in numbers :

Indum sanguineo veluti violaverit óstro  
Si quis ebur ; vel mixta rubent ubi lilia multa  
Alba rosa : tales virgo dabat ore colores.

But what do I say ? What is Virgil's Tyrian-stained ivory ; what his lilies and roses, compared with the image raised by that incomparable passage of your letter, of one of the Graces, in the form of her whom you have dared to call my *Augusta*, diffusing her blush on the neck of a Love ? I think I see her nestling her lips on the soft and hollowed shoulder of her laughing little cousin. Alas ! alas ! what am I about ? And what is it you mean to make of me, Vernon ? It is as you say ; I never was in love before.

How justly do you distinguish between that pleasant kind of feeling which so generally passes for love, and that passion, approved by the judgment, which fills and expands the heart! Yes, you have opened my eyes to the state of mine, and I thank you;—it puts me the more completely on my guard, and determines me never, never to deceive her, who so fills and expands it. She shall know me, Vernon—know how unworthy I am of her; and I will only beg her not to abhor me.

But I will not be precipitate — I will pursue my task. The progress I *have* made in it, though little, is of unspeakable comfort to me, and I will not resign it. — *There is a God, and there ought to be an immortality.* The BEING I yet very imperfectly figure to myself by that name must be omniscient, must consequently know the sincerity with which I am now applying myself to obtain a just idea of HIM, and of his will respecting man. This thought is pregnant with a hope I never had before;—he will not desert his creature who does not desert him; and though, when I left him in my youth

he left me too, he will listen now to my entreaty, for he knows

I have no thought to mock his throne with prayer  
Wrung from the coward crouching of despair,

but offered with a sincerity that dares challenge even his eye.

You say, Vernon, that it is not time for you to think. I am no preacher, my friend ; I have no intention of becoming one ; but if by experience of any manly gratification I can recommend it to you, I will not be afraid or ashamed of doing it. If thought were an enemy to youthful *happiness*, I would not have you think ; — it is not to *happiness* that it is an enemy. We are nearly of the same age ; we have been companions in thoughtlessness — I use too lenient a word, but I will not bore you. — You are, compared to me, Hyperion to a Satyr ; you have no livid stains upon your breast. — But you are losing your advantage ; — you are on a precipice. If you will not yet think on the serious subjects which occupy me — think, I beseech you, think on your own danger of planting stings like mine

in your bosom. You tell me I am in love — so I fear are you. Oh! how gladly and gratefully would I encourage in you a love like mine! I cannot encourage yours.

Once more I will mention Mrs. Godfrey to you. You now seldom speak of her to me, and never as freely as you did last year. Circumstances have given a serious cast to my part in our correspondence. You must not be afraid of me, Vernon; I will spare you — I ought to spare you. It may be true, that it is the part of friendship to show us our faults; but to friendship tenderness is as essential as truth:—a rough, plain dealer is rather a friendly monitor than an admonishing friend, and the manner too frequently counteracts the matter. — Besides, from *me* asperity would be absurd. I shall not surprise you with the common-places against a pursuit in which you engaged through an idle ambition, and in which I see you now bound by a dangerous fascination. The only argument I will use is this; you are possessed of a blessing of the highest nature in the friendship of the Manor-House family, now

including Saville and his charming daughter ; if you do not immediately extinguish the desire you are vainly fostering, I say *immediately*, you will lose all — you will be banished from that Eden ; you will become an outcast from the valuable part of society ; you will sink into a Darrell, hating and hated ; and, though you can never be as wretched, the worm of lost happiness will gnaw at your heart.

You have hitherto escaped, because you have trifled where trifling is only laughed at, that is, with trifling creatures — with your Vortical dames ; but you will not escape the rock on which your passions are blowing you, unless you put about in time. There is a property in virtue, where it exists — and I begin to believe that there is more of it in the paths unfrequented by us than I supposed — which attracts and assimilates hearts that have any affinity whatever with it ; but it possesses also a benumbing property on hearts over which it has no influence. I am sure that yours is endowed with a sufficient affinity, but it is at present counteracted by an artificial magnet of

great power. Between these two influences much depends upon your own exertion. I have done on this subject. — Be content, Vernon, with *friendship*, and you will assimilate daily with this virtuous, happy group; but if you ask for *love*, you are benumbed for the rest of your life.

I will not finish without thanking you for the lighter, but very pleasant, parts of your letter. Your Vortical observations at Bath; — Beau Nash and Rufus; — the warming-pan; — Molly on the stairs; — Rufus at the fireside; — Lady Bab's nightcap; — an evangelical sinner frightened into Christian forgiveness; — the chariot scene; — the ball; — Mariton's disappointment; — the *Nudes* and *Spartans*; — all exquisite. Thanks! Continue to unite this strain with the more interesting parts of your letters. With you I will laugh still. Adieu!

Ever yours,

F. DARRELL.

## LETTER XLII.

*Mr. Vernon to Sir Francis Darrell.*

Mount-Vernon, Jan. 15th.

MY DEAR DARRELL,

THOUGH my pen will now soon give place to a more voluble instrument, it shall perform its duty once more before I quit Mount-Vernon for town. The Manor-House family leave the country some day next week, and purpose to spend a couple of days at Oxford. The family here set out a few days after them. I shall precede both, and have already written to have my apartments in Piccadilly prepared for me. — I shall come to you the very day I arrive.

Your letter gives me great pleasure; your language indeed continues positive on the topic of *marriage*, but then it flows so naturally on that of *love*, that my

hope of you is considerably encreased. You have well described FANCY. She is undoubtedly a gunpowder goddess in modern times, and delights occasionally in blowing up a victim in those regions of *Il Penseroso*, where she has arbitrary power; and if you do not take care, you will be the next. In her pleasant haunts of *L'Allegro* she is never cruel: her combustibles are all made into Catherine wheels, rockets, Roman candles, Indian crackers, and a variety of other brilliant affairs, but not in the least dangerous. I must persuade you to give up your quarters in the vicinity of her powder-mills, and come and take your abode with us: —

Where, I ween, a beauty lies,  
The cynosure of neighb'ring eyes.

What a train had Fancy set to blow you up! I am glad I was in time to save you, and I hope that you will in future *eschew*  
MELANCHOLY,

Of Cerberus and blackest midnight born.



Haste to the nymph with whom we see  
Jest and youthful jollity ;  
Quips and cranks, and wanton wiles,  
Nods and becks, and wreathed smiles ;  
Such us hang on Hebe's cheek,  
And love to live in dimple sleek :  
Sport that wrinkled Care derides,  
And Laughter holding both his sides.  
Come live with her, and live with me,  
In unreprieved pleasures free.

I think your studies proceed well ; —  
already they comfort you. — This is *multum in parvo* ; but I beseech you mix  
*gaieté de cœur* with them. You will find  
it true wisdom ; it is the alternation that  
gives relish to both. By-the-bye, I am  
sorry you have only got to the devil ; —  
it is an ominous halt.— I wish you had  
got past him, or stopped a little to bait  
on the other side. I beseech you, get  
beyond him as soon as you can ; and if  
he does not stop you altogether, I'll have  
a tussle with him myself — by-and-bye.

Deceive her ! No ! I would become her  
champion myself, and undeceive her by  
striking off the mask. Nor is she to be  
deceived. My advice was to use your  
*reason* in what is *material*, and not to be  
fastidious in what is *immaterial*. I con-

fess that if your union depends upon *your* becoming a *Roman Catholic*, I think it will never take place — but it depends upon no such thing. I believe, however, that it depends upon your becoming *sincerely* a Christian. I have been thinking how you will manage, if you proceed so slow, to get married before you are old people. Why, you have got no farther than the third chapter of Genesis; but let me see if I can't give you a lift here. — Upon reflection, you are in the New Testament already — for is not the coming of Christ the consequence of Lucifer's manœuvres in that very third chapter? and thus the Religion you are in search of is coeval with the creation of the world. I think you may make something of this hint. It should at least carry you to the typical intended sacrifice of the patriarch's son. Mind you acknowledge your obligation to me as far as a hint goes, no more, for I have not time to go deep into the reasoning upon it; *non agilis fio*; — but,

*Nunc in Aristippi furtim præcepta relabor,  
Et mihi res, non me rebus submittere conor.*

I am glad my light sketches amuse you — How odd it is that there should be any doubt about *a soul*, when a little *Eau de Cologne* can prove it. Where it resides is another question; if that should happen to be among your puzzles, remember where Sir Walter Raleigh found it :

Philosophers pretend to tell  
That, like a hermit in a cell,  
The soul doth in the body dwell :  
But I, who am not over-wise,  
Think it exists in Chloe's eyes;  
Thence to her lip it frequent stole,  
For there I kiss'd her very soul.

There is, however, some sophistry in this, for if the soul moves from one part of the body to another according to sensation, it may be argued that it follows painful as well as pleasurable feeling, in which case it may be found in the toe of a gouty man. — Now though I have no objection to have seen and heard it on Lady Bab's lips when she kissed your Augusta, I must be excused from ever consenting to find it, where it suffered so grievously in Rufus. By-the-bye, you

don't seem to have been affected at all with the said smack of Lady Bab's, but to be more taken with her night-cap. She is a good humoured creature, but a little glib with her tongue.

You make no enquiry for any lady after the fatigues of the ball — but I will suppose you do, and tell you the result of mine. I rode over to Manor-House next day. I found both the ladies well, and talking — not of the politics or anecdotes of the ball, but — of Sir Francis Darrell. — Mr. Saville was present; Godfrey was on horseback with his guests, for exercise.

“We were talking of your friend Sir Francis,” said Saville; “How different do I find the man from his character! And it is extraordinary that we can trace nothing against him. As to his personal conduct — his modesty, his reserve, his caution, are really even overstrained. Of what does he accuse himself, and why does he act in this manner?”

What could I possibly say, Darrell? I said that I could ascribe it to nothing but a tincture of melancholy acquired by

habit in avoiding society, to which some early circumstances of your life had given you a disgust. I added, that I was convinced it was not in your nature, and that you only wanted the company of friends whom you could esteem, to restore you to what Nature intended you to be.

Mrs. Godfrey spoke of the day you had passed with them at Grove Park, and in terms of you that I was a little jealous of. But was *her cousin* altogether silent? No, Darrell, she was not—she had herself given rise to the conversation by referring to your note, and hers in reply. She said, without the least scruple, or blush, or fear of her sentiment being attributed to the passion of love, that, “you had but to give fair play to your understanding to be one of the most exalted of men.”

And these are the people you shun.— I cannot bear to think of it—it makes me mad.— Expect to find me so, when I dart in upon you at May Fair; and prepare for me—not a strait waistcoat, but.—

a remedy ; and that you may, by the charm of a single sentence—by assuring me that you will cultivate the friendship offered you, even if you reject the love, the existence of which I have so clearly indicated to you. If, in addition to this *Recipe*, you would but consent to court Bab for the winter, the cure would not only be complete, but crowned with inexpressible delight ; and conceive how fully you would convince her that her suspicions respecting Lady Betty were the idle fancies of her brain. Bab looked very handsome in the cotton night-cap, and, if it would be any argument to you in favour of my proposition, I'll get you a sight of it, and her head in it, either by another application for salve, or by calling fire at her door before she gets into bed.

I have got rid of Rufus ; he left me a few days after the Ball at Manor-House, and sooner than he intended, I know, from an irresistible look of intelligence that met his eyes, wherever he turned them ; but the intelligibility of it was so kept under by the corrected muscles of

the servants' faces, that he half persuaded himself it was nothing more than his suspicion. I saw him eyeing them all by turns from the corner of his eye; besides which Mount-Vernon and Bab tormented him with civility.

"I am sorry, Mr. Palmer," says my brother, with a dry look as if he had forgotten his disaster, "I am sorry this frost prevents our hunting; you should have the bay mare; she is not so hard to manage as the horse you rode when you were down here before."

"Law! Mount-Vernon, how can you talk so?" cries Bab, "don't you see Mr. Palmer's thumb?"

"I beg his pardon, I had quite forgot," replied he: "But why not? It's the whip thumb, I see. He does not want his right hand to manage his bridle."

"Truly so, my Lord," said Rufus, who thought he must say something, "truly so; and if it was not for the frost —"

"How is the barometer, Bab?" cries

Mount-Vernon, with a look of hope, which Rufus accompanied with a look that anticipated a meaning in those words which to him were rather obscure. Bab, to whom the meaning, both direct and equivocal, was well known, answered that the silver was sinking fast —”

“ You don’t tell it me ?” cried Mount-Vernon, with joy in his countenance. “ Then the scent may lie to-morrow — that mare’s a gentle creature, Mr. Palmer — I would not put you upon her else.”

Rufus, comprehending by degrees that the sinking of the silver had something to do with the opening of the weather, stole a look all round to see if any of us suspected the feelings of which he was conscious ; he saw nothing to make him suppose it. Aspell was with us, but Mariton was gone.

“ Pho !” said his female plague, “ why do you offer the mare to Mr. Palmer ? He had better not ride, I’m sure.”

He looked at me for help — “ I said I did not think that there would be an im-



mediate change of weather" — this was confirmed by Aspell's saying :

" I believe, Lady Barbara, you are mistaken ; I rather think the silver has risen within this hour."

" May be so," replied she ; " I won't be positive."

Rufus, set once more at ease, talked big, and was sorry he could not have another day's hunt with his Lordship and her Ladyship, which so trifling an affair as his thumb should not have prevented.

During this purgatory of Rufus's, Lady Mount-Vernon said little, in which I followed her example ; for, though I could have taken pleasure in teasing him, I had much more in contemplating her, whose looks in silence spoke her soul ; — they did not say ; " don't do this, for it displeases me:" but " I feel uneasy at the uneasiness of another, and pained still more from his being my guest." She has a sweet disposition ; and I swear to you I believe my heart has been made better since she

became my sister, by the influence of her manners. There is something very pleasing in the affection I feel for her; there is in it the softness and the tenderness of the passion of love without its anxiety, its hope, its fear, its restless desire. It is a peculiar affection, differing as well from friendship as from love; esteem is its basis, but it is more allied to sensation than friendship is; it is, perhaps this pure excitement which constitutes that family-love infused by nature in the blood of parents and children, of brothers and sisters, whom she leads to contemplate one another with a degree of ardour not essential to friendship. With this warm, but pure, affection, I contemplate this virtuous admirable woman, as much as if she had been born my sister. And here, in gratitude for your concluding admonition, I will say to you that it has made me wish that this was the affection I felt for your Augusta's cousin. It is all I can say at present.

You *shall* know more of the Mount-Vernons; but we must not let my sister

humanize us so much as to give up Rufus, who deserves a rougher friendship still than mine. I believe he would have staid till now at Mount-Vernon, but for the terror of the bay mare, which my brother took him and Aspell to see. As soon as they returned to the house, Rufus, in going through the hall, visited the barometer, and thrice in less than an hour ejaculated :

“ I wonder if the silver stands.”

These symptoms suggested a wicked notion to Mount-Vernon : he, unobserved, raised the index, and meant, on Rufus's next ejaculation, to propose his looking ; but Lady Bab, happening to come in first, and having taken a look at the glass in the hall, exclaimed,

“ Law ! Mount-Vernon ; I tell you the silver is sinking — go and see yourself.”

“ Let me,” says Rufus.

“ By all means.”

“ Half an inch at least,” roared the astounded dupe, from the hall.

He fidgetted to and from the barometer the rest of the day, and, suddenly recollecting indispensable business

in town, ordered his man to have a post-chaise at the door by day-light.

Adieu! — You will see me in a few days.

Ever yours,

L. VERNON.

## LETTER XLIII.

*Augusta to Angelica.*

London, Jan. 27th.

MY DEAREST ANGELICA,

I AM in daily expectation of your answer to the long letter I wrote to you nearly two months ago at Manor-House : in the mean time I will begin another, to be concluded and dispatched on the arrival of yours. I think of you daily, Angelica, and never fail to mention you in my prayers. When shall I be happy enough to embrace you again? My father has promised me to write soon, and urge our dear Marchese to visit England in the spring ; and, if he cannot bring the family at present, at least to allow you to come to me. I intend to add a few lines with so pressing an entreaty, that he will not be able to refuse

me. I know how well he loves me, and he knows how well I love him too, and my dear Marchesa, who, with your kind good aunt will unite their influence in obtaining such happiness for their absent Augusta. Remember, Grove Park is the English home of our Pisani, and the house in which I am now writing shall be their town-house, for so again and again have said both George and Caroline, who delight me by talking of you often.

The more the characters of these affectionate cousins of mine open upon me, the more do I love them ; and I long to make them your relations, for you are my sister, and as such they are eager to receive you. We are now in Hanover-square for the winter, but only just arrived, and I know nothing yet of London, except the incessant rattle of carriage-wheels, and the occasional clatter of knockers — a noise at the door of a house, the dexterity in making which is one of the accomplishments of a London footman. I meant to have begun my letter at Manor-House, but we were too much

engaged during the last week of our stay in the country. I will now return to the subjects which have interested me there, and which will, therefore, be interesting to my dear Angelica wherever I am, or wherever she is.

You will have seen, my dearest sister, how much Sir Francis Darrell occupies of my last letter, and have observed that he occupied much of my thoughts. New circumstances, far from lessening, have increased the interest I take in this extraordinary man. You know that, in addition to gratitude, all that I saw or heard of his actions in Northamptonshire raised my esteem for him to a very high degree, in spite of the awkward appearances against him at Malvern Wells. Conceive how delighted I was to learn that they were, indeed, but appearances, and that his meeting there with Lady Betty Bramblebear was, at least on his side, purely accidental. I was assured of this by Mr. Vernon, with whom I have made you acquainted by my letters. This gave me great pleasure; but it would be difficult for me to tell you how much that pleasure

was increased, on his informing me that his friend was seriously applying himself to the study of those truths, which only are wanting to lead him to as much perfection as human nature can attain in its present state. When he left us at Grove Park, he went to his house in London, where he has since spent his time chiefly in his library. I felt great joy, which I scrupled not to indulge, from the conviction of its being independent of love; for I thought of him, as of a noble mind exploring and finding the real paths of happiness. As of a lover I could not think of him; for, even allowing that every obstacle were removed, he had never given me the least reason to consider him in that light; — of course, it could never enter my head. I thought of him, indeed, as my preserver; and that, I own, was a relation sufficiently interesting, to increase the pleasure arising from the more general motive.

I was, however, doomed to have my joy disturbed; and this was done so suddenly, and in such a manner as really to make me sick at heart. Caroline had



left me to spend an hour with Lady Mount-Vernon; while with her, Lady Barbara Lewis and Mr. Vernon came in. I have already given you some idea of Lady Barbara. She is good-humoured, but has little command of her tongue. Lady Mount-Vernon had mentioned Sir Francis, of whom I spoke as I usually do. Lady Barbara for a joke, for she is incapable of acting from a bad motive, warned me against him, and introduced the story of his attachment to a married woman. Mr. Vernon contradicted it, and defended his friend, upon which, for the jest's sake, she appealed to me as a witness of his improper conduct at Malvern with Lady Betty Bramblebear. I was a little angry, and protested against such false reports. Lady Mount-Vernon did the same, when Lady Barbara, in excuse for herself, said it was natural for her to believe what she heard, when confirmed by what she had seen *with her own eyes*.

This gave me a pang very different from anger, and I fear it was visible, for she was sorry, and would make friends

with me in her abrupt way. Lady Mount-Vernon softened the conversation, and I was resuming the coolness which I am fortunate enough seldom to lose, when my mind was again thrown into a degree of irritation, by a circumstance which appeared to me very extraordinary at the time. I must here tell you that, among the acquaintances of the Vernons, there is a Lord Mariton, who, by the way, has offered me his title, a man of few and feeble recommendations.

Lady Barbara's reports were scarcely got rid of, when this Lord comes in with a newspaper, containing a paragraph so evidently pointing out Sir Francis Darrell and Lady Betty Bramblebear, that there was no mistaking it; stating that they had eloped between Cheltenham and Bath, and were on their way to the continent. But the names not being inserted in the paragraph, Lord Mariton thought proper to supply them, on which he was called upon by Mr. Vernon, who put him in mind that Sir Francis was his friend. This Lord gave as an authority for his mentioning the name, the talk of a house

Angelica, that I could not sleep for thinking of it : I lost my appetite ; I was attacked with head-aches ; in short, my health seemed to be threatened ; my father and my cousins were alarmed ; I strove against it, but without success, and it was proposed, that we should make an immediate excursion to Bath.

The uneasiness I caused roused me. I reflected upon myself as being very weak to suffer my feelings to overcome me in this manner. I became ashamed of it, and this counteracted my disorder. The journey, the change of scenes, the novelty of Bath, and the perpetual flow of the company, aided the struggle I made to conquer myself, and in less than a week I was perfectly recovered.

This is a true account, Angelica, of your sister's feelings and their effects. That I am very solicitous for the welfare, and more particularly for the conversion, of my preserver, I do not deny ; but surely, my dear sister, I am not so weak a creature as not to be able to wish a man well, without falling in love with him. Tell me not that I am in love, Angelica ;

— there are such reasons why I should not be so, that, knowing them, you must confess that it is impossible. In the first place, he is an Infidel : — that is, *was*, for I have yet to learn what progress he has made during the last month. How you will be delighted to hear that he has made any progress in belief ! — but I anticipate, — I was saying that his being an infidel is one reason ; then the life he is said to have led ; then the secret of the urn and its hollow pedestal ; and, lastly, the evident indifference of his heart respecting me, — for, were it otherwise than indifferent to me, would he avoid me and my friends ? Would he so easily devote himself to study, and not think of me ? Weigh all these reasons, and ask yourself, my dearest Angelica, if it be possible for me to yield my heart before it is sought : — no, my sister knows me better.

You will naturally expect from me some account of Bath, but I must be brief, as I am impatient to take you back to Manor-House. Indeed you already, from our books, and from what we heard

together before I left Signa, know enough of it to excuse my brevity. It is a beautiful, clean, and commodious town, originally the resort of invalids, but now, next to London, the centre of fashion. It seems to be a property of all the invalid places over the world to attract fashionable and idle people. Bath is recommended to gouty persons; but for half a dozen pair of crutches, and as many wheeling easy-chairs, you may count hundreds and thousands of dancing-pumps and saddle-horses.

In all the public rooms there is great elegance, great taste, displayed. We went to a ball at each of the rooms; the general *coup-d'œil*, and the vast assemblage of handsome, well-dressed persons, give a high idea of the beauty and fashion of England; I was charmed, and continued so, in spite of considerable disgust, which a minuter inspection of some of the female part of the company created. I really blushed, as I looked at them; but they seemed to have no shame in appearing in public half naked. I have seen no indecency equal to this either in

Italy or in France. In the latter country I have sometimes observed the back of a woman too much exposed, but they have the modesty to cover their bosoms. This attention to decency shows not only modesty but true taste; for it inspires what dress aims at, admiration; whereas this indecent exposure cannot but raise disgust; they who cannot attract by conversation, or the charm of beautiful features, resort to this imaginary expedient as a substitute, and foolishly think that impudence can supply at once the place of beauty and of wit.

But I must beg you, my dear Angelica, not to allow your imagination to do injustice to my countrywomen, by taking this account as characteristic of them — no indeed — an English woman, with the greatest personal beauty, unites the greatest modesty, and her claim to admiration is supported by good sense. The fact is that the generality of English women have distinguished understandings, and it is principally those who have little or none, or those who are deserters of virtue, that thus defy the opinion of the rational

part of society. Their number is comparatively small, yet some of them are to be seen in almost all companies; but I have been told they do not hold their footing there long. — When virtue is once dismantled of the dignity which fortifies it, it is seldom preserved. Though these observations have occurred to me in speaking of Bath, I have found room for them elsewhere, and they were not inapplicable at our Herefordshire balls and visits. These females form a peculiar class, mingling every where, and respected no where.

I was upon the whole much pleased with Bath, and we purpose paying it another visit in the spring season. — But what gave me the greatest pleasure there was an unexpected meeting, the day before we left it, with Lady Betty Bramblebear, between whom and her husband, there appeared the greatest harmony. Though Mr. Vernon's report of his friend's residence and pursuits in London had had some weight with me, I could not help attributing the part he had taken to the partiality of friendship. — It was no

dependence on his report that had determined me to struggle with my feelings, but the first of all motives, to act right, and to consider the feelings of my father and of my cousins.

Our stay at Bath was necessarily limited to a short time. Christmas is the chief festive season in England, and the usual time of the year for the more public manifestation of charity to the poor, as well as of hospitality and gaiety among the rich. It is in fact the Carnival of England. The time is generally spent by those who have landed property on their estates, and at the neighbouring chief towns, where their presence produces spirit and a bustle that is very advantageous to the country. To encourage this laudable habit the government has for some years past fixed the assembling of the parliament at the distance of some weeks after Christmas, as the meeting draws all the rich and fashionable families to town.

Before our excursion to Bath, we were engaged in those neighbourly festivities, and a large party had been invited to a



ball at Manor-House, on Christmas-eve. We were therefore obliged to be back in time, but we got home only the day before. The weather was very cold, but my dear affectionate Caroline took care to prevent my suffering much from it, by wrapping me up in furs. You will imagine that my feelings on my journey back were very different from those I had when we left Manor-House. I was not only well in person; my mind had received a conviction that restored it to its former ease, and the effect was a flow of spirits, which was not decreased by a circumstance that took place next morning — a circumstance you will perhaps think extraordinary, but with which I am sure you will be pleased. I must tell it you as it happened, for it was attended with an emotion, for which I was angry with myself, and of which you must give me your opinion.

I was sitting in my cousin's room, playing on the sofa with my beautiful little Caroline, when Mr. Vernon came in. — He told me he had rode over from Mount-Vernon, to bring me a letter

himself. I naturally imagined it was from Lady Mount-Vernon, and asked if it was not. — He suddenly said, and I thought with a particular look;

“From Darrell.”

The abrupt mention of the name, in connection with a letter to me, certainly created a very unaccountable feeling — my blood seemed to forsake my heart, and rushed with violence into my face. Fortunately I was still fondling Caroline, which gave me an opportunity of hiding my face on her neck, till the colour was gone. I would not have had Mr. Vernon perceive it for the world; and I afterwards saw by his manner that he had not, which also convinced me that he had no meaning in what I thought a particular look, when he mentioned the name of Darrell. Did I not know my heart; had I not thoroughly examined it, my dear Angelica, I would, without hesitation own to you, that there was something suspicious in this violent blushing, and I would immediately have recourse to some penance to chastise the secret inclination of my heart. But such

an inclination could not be secret to myself, Angelica — I could not love and not know it — no, it is not love — I never think, I never could think, of being united with Sir Francis Darrell; — and with this proof of the freedom of my heart, I would not banish from it my better feelings, nor would my dear sister advise it. She will rejoice, as I do, at the hope raised by the note, for it cannot be called a letter, with which Sir Francis has honoured me. You will find a copy of it, with my answer, at the end of this letter.

And now, my dearest Angelica, let me ask you, if any thing can be more delightful than the contemplation of a being, good by nature, but perverted by evil communication and habit, exploring truth, and finding the paths of everlasting life and happiness? I know you will feel it as I do — as my father, as my cousins do — they were as much delighted with my note, as I was myself. It gave occasion to a conversation some days after I received it, in which the Bishop of — took a part. He is a

friend of George's, who loves and admires him. George spoke of Sir Francis, and in confidence mentioned the circumstance. He was greatly pleased, and said that much might be hoped from such a disposition, with such an understanding. My father related the restoration of Grove Park; and at the Bishop's request, I gave a short account of his preserving me in France.

"Providence will interpose its influence in his favour," said he; "depend upon it, he will finish by becoming a complete Christian."

The word *complete*, Angelica, conveyed more to my mind than the speaker intended, and I put up a secret prayer in my heart that it might be *complete* — complete to salvation. But I must not omit the good man's observations which followed, — they are so admirable, and were so impressive, that I wrote them when he left us, and I think I can give them to you word for word.

"If a man good by nature," continued he, "sits down to examine the Gospel, is there the least shadow of rea-

son why he should reject it? He finds in it a religion, pure, holy, and benevolent, as the God that gave it. He finds not only its moral precepts, but even its sublimest mysteries calculated to promote internal sanctity, vital piety, unbounded philanthropy. He finds it throughout so great and noble, so congenial to the finest feelings and most generous sentiments of his soul, that he cannot but *wish* it may be true; and never yet, I believe, did any good man wish it to be true, but he actually found it so. He sees in it every expectation of nature answered, every infirmity supported, every want supplied, every terror dissipated, every hope confirmed; nay, he sees that God has done abundantly above all that he could either ask or think; that he has given him *eternal happiness in a life to come*. Will this man love darkness rather than light? Will he choose to pursue even virtue with much pains, little success, and no other wages but death? or will he be led to her through a safe and easy path by an

infallible guide, who does not desire him to serve God for nought?"

How admirable and how just are these remarks! They are such as our dear Abate Cevello himself would have uttered — I could not but look at this admirable man with veneration and affection. I wished *my catechumen*, as he calls himself, had heard him, and I think my recollection in writing what he spoke was assisted by an idea of sending it to him, if ever he should write me another note. He has not, nor do I now expect one as we are come to town. My father and George talk of calling upon him, as well on the final settlement of the papers relative to Grove Park, as by way of paying him a visit; and Mr. Vernon declares he will force him into company. — I doubt his success.

\* \* \* \* \*

I have been out with Carolina, returning some calls. — What beautiful streets! what animated countenances every where! what rattling of coaches! what thunder-

ing of knockers! — But I must conclude my country life before I begin my town one.

I made an *en passant* mention of Lord Mariton to you, which you will think too slight, considering the importance of the subject. I told you he was an acquaintance of the Vernons, though I might have said of George's; but I met him first at Mount-Vernon. He is a man that says what he hears others say, and repeats newspapers: — I have shown you how disagreeable he can make himself, and the offer he made me did not render him more agreeable in my eyes. The very day after the unpleasant hour I spent, where I expected a delightful one, he came to Manor-House, and begged Caroline to give him an opportunity of speaking to me alone. — I meant to have avoided him that morning, but, thus called for, I made no hesitation in receiving him, I was conscious of some little prejudiced feelings before he made his appearance, but recollected that the occasion demanded civility; and I declined his proposal with great politeness, the misfortune of

which was, that he thought himself encouraged to repeat it, which he did on the evening of the ball, at Manor-House, when I felt it necessary to mark my resolution more pointedly. I avoided him, and contrived not to dance with him. He was convinced; I have seen nothing of him since — and I believe his proposal is known only to our own family.

So much for my first and only lover in England; though I think I am mistaken: — I believe I have another, as to my soul at least.

Among George's acquaintance at Woodlee, there is a good kind of a good-looking, soft-faced, red-haired, half-witted young man, whom he thinks well of, and whom Caroline and I pity for mistaken zeal, and foolish well-meaning. I wish our pity may not some day see occasion to give way to a less agreeable passion; but I begin to suspect that his zeal has more of earth than heaven in it, and that his folly is less connected with well-meaning than with evil-doing. I will not go into his history or character at present; I only mention him as



my lover, or intending-to-be lover. He began his courtship at Bath, and how think you? By assuring me that I was in danger of losing my way, for, from what he had heard, I was in the wrong path, one, that if I would allow him, he would prove to me did lead to — that is, did not lead to — heaven.

His first thought was to place me among the damned, but excluding me from the state of the blessed, he recollected, was a politer way of expressing the same thing. As I thought him sincere, and I really do not know even now but that he is, I determined not to take offence, but to hear what he would say: we happened to be sitting together on a bench in one of the rooms, while George and Caroline were talking with some of their acquaintance at a little distance.

“Mr. Palmer,” said I, “you would alarm me, if I had not taken some pains to convince myself that I was in the right road.”

“You are as wide of it,” said he, “as Mecca from Jerusalem. I protest

it is a pity that so sweet a young lady, for you are a very sweet young lady, should not be led where the true light shineth, and by the illumination of which she might perceive the tinsel and mock jewels, the paste diamonds, and wax pearls, which from dark corners dazzle the eyes of her otherwise excellent understanding."

"What dark corners do you mean, Mr. Palmer," said I.

"Those," said he, "of a certain Bel-dam mentioned in the Revelations."

"I am still at a loss," replied I.

"Very likely," said he; "for they keep these things from your knowledge."

"Who keep?" cried I — "and what things?"

He gazed in a very odd way at me, as if he meant more than he could speak; then said;

"Truly it is a difficult thing for a young man like me, and not having those privileges a happy state might afford him, to expound with delicate propriety to a delicate young lady those

— matters — but if — it were my happy lot” —

I looked at him as if I anticipated a proposal; but that idea, which I am sure was in his mind, received such a check by my look, that he was puzzled how to make a conclusion to the happy lot, which, however, he turned off with more address than I thought him master of. — “If,” stammered he, “it were my happy lot to — to — to — I beg your pardon, I was going to say — rival the Pope: — but that is not my meaning — rivalry is out of the question. — I mean if it were my happy lot to render you spiritual service, I should think myself the most fortunate of men.”

I should have shown some displeasure, but that *Pity* still held its power over me, and I only said, with a smile, “that I begged he would not trouble himself to think of my spiritual state.” He seemed pleased at getting off so well; and far from being repressed, he paid me the more attention from what had passed between us.

When I repeated this little religious

lesson to Caroline, and the tendency which I thought it had of an offer of her neighbour's heart, she laughed, and said she began to fear that all was not gold that glittered, nor all zeal religion, and told me that he had also been talking some nonsense to her, from which he had extricated himself the same way.

We determined, however, not to be hasty in our judgment, and though at times we have not known what to make of his looks, he has never ventured upon similar talk.

The truth of what our dear Abate used to say to us, on the separation from the church, is wonderfully exemplified in this country. When once a schism is made, there is no saying into how many other schisms it will break. England is full of sectaries : but I shall take another opportunity of expressing my sentiments to you on the state of religion here, when I have seen more, and can judge better. I shall at present say no more on the subject than that I find my dear Caroline's sentiments, though differing from mine in some respects, yet often

agreesing, and certainly pleasing by their pureness and sincerity : and there is one delightful thought accompanies all our serious conversations — she has never shown the least desire to sway my opinions, or to draw me from the church. On my part I have not been equally passive ; I have shown a desire to have her one of us, though I have been cautious of persisting, for it would ill become so feeble an intellect as mine to dictate, or be dogmatic.

I remove from the country but slowly, my dear Angelica, and I have a good deal to do there yet, before I can feel myself established in Hanover-Square : — I will try to be more expeditious. I will not give you a particular account of our country balls, till I see something of those in town. At that given by my cousins, I found Mr. Palmer again, a little sweetly assiduous, and hinting spiritual solicitude, but I laughed, and made use of him in my dancing engagements to prevent my being annoyed by Lord Mariton.

Mrs. Dartford was with us : — we

talked of you and of Clementina Belvoce. She has written very strongly to her son to return immediately, without forming any contract before he sees her. As he was going to Naples, I am of opinion, that being out of sight of the object by whom his vanity was flattered — for after all, that is the secret of his fickleness — he will not find it difficult to comply with her desire. She sends her kind regards to you, and says that if you will catch him, and chain him, and keep him at your side, and bring him to England, her gratitude would be boundless. I wish Angelica, we could fall upon some means of curing this youth of his folly, for her sake. By all accounts he would be an estimable character if he could be corrected of it. If you cannot turn your thought to the glory of fixing him for life, try I beseech you to do it long enough to bring him to England. I think it very probable that he will hasten from Naples to Florence: — if so, I have promised Mrs. Dartford that you shall do all in your power to take care of him for her.

And now, adieu to Herefordshire for the present; nor will I stop at Oxford longer than to change horses, though, the fact is, we stopped there two days, my cousins having friends at Christchurch, with whom they had engaged to spend a day on their way to London.

The celebrity of Oxford as a University you are well acquainted with. It has given many great and learned men to the world. We are to spend some time in that part of the country, when the weather is more favourable for moving out of doors. The cold for some weeks has been intense, and, while we were at Oxford, there was a fall of snow. I am told that the winter is more than usually severe:—you have no idea of it in dear Italy. But in spite of its sharp attack, you would not dislike it:—it is friendly to health, and gives colour to the complexion;—they say mine is improved already. But the horses are changed,—let us run into the coach, and with our pelisses and muffs, and furred feet-baskets keep ourselves warm all the way:—we are now

at the door in Hanover-Square—get out and run to the fire, with a good appetite for dinner at six o'clock.

Having brought you to London, I shall conclude this letter. If I receive one from you this week, I will acknowledge it under the same cover; if not, this shall travel alone, and reproach you for your tardiness in writing. My love to the Marchese, and Marchesa, and Signora Bentivole. You know, my dearest Angelica, how you are loved by

Your affectionate

AUGUSTA.



## LETTER XLIV.

*Mr. Saville to the Marchese di Pisani.*

London, Feb.

MY DEAR PISANI,

YOUR letter gave me great pleasure : I received it while spending the Christmas in the country at my nephew George Godfrey's, but I thought it better to delay writing again till we came to town. Your participation of my happiness in the affection of my nephew and niece, and the gratification you express at my account of our reception at Grove Park by Sir Francis Darrell, and of the time we spent in Northamptonshire, was a renewal to me of the delight I experienced in those events, and which I felt as I wrote to you.

I had indeed anticipated your feelings, for I knew your friendship—I knew

what impression it would make on you, the Marchesa, Angelica, and your sister; and imagination gave actual enjoyment of future pleasure since realized and returned by your letter. How friendship animates existence ! multiplies joys ! assures us of our soul ! It is the vital principle of happiness ; — all other sources produce accidental streams which may be cut off, or cease to flow without destroying happiness : — ambition, wealth, pursuits and desires of every kind may change or be dropped altogether, and man may still be happy if friendship continues its course ; even that peculiar love, in its nature so much more ardent, must at last fail or resolve itself into friendship of an exquisite kind. It is the great source of all other enjoyments, for what poor joy must that be which cannot be imparted, which has no echoing hearts to reverberate the emotion : — it is a solitary shriek in a wilderness, it agitates the air and dies away unheard.

I speak of men — for he must be more than man, who in this world can

be happy alone; he must have a full belief of his own immortality; his imagination must already enter him into the communion of higher beings: — to such a man, if ever there was such, earth is at an end, and heaven begun: — but he, who talks of lonely bliss without that supernatural impression, deceives himself. If he contemplates the scenes of nature as effects of chance, of any cause but those appointed by a God to whom he is known, and by whom he is regarded, his bliss is the wonder of a boy of inexperience, and after a few gazings at the show the excitement fails, the bliss is gone, and if he is as deficient in virtue as in piety, he will be more miserable among hills and cataracts, than at a carnival, to which he will soon resort as to the better lot of a being who merits happiness nowhere.

These reflections, my dear Pisani, have presented themselves to my mind, in consequence of thinking, as I do, of our friendship, and comparing the result with the sentiments and extraordinary conduct of Sir Francis Darrell, on the same

subject. I told you how both Godfrey and I had courted his friendship, and how we had resolved not to be guided by the opinions of others respecting him. We have persisted in our determination, but all in vain; he will not have our friendship, he will not give us his; he rails at society, immures himself in his library in town before the usual season, and now talks of going into the country when others come to town. We have been at his house twice:—the first time we were not admitted; he returned this call by merely leaving his card at our door, with a letter, appointing a day for us to meet, and sign the papers relative to Grove Park, which were ready to be executed. We accordingly waited upon him. I found a very marked alteration in his countenance,—it had none of that underlook, those varied contortions of the brows, that satirical smile which I observed in our meetings at Paris. On the other hand, it wanted that cheerfulness, that appearance of a mind content with itself, which it wore on the pleasant day he made us pass at Grove Park. He

smiled, but his smile was that of a kind reception—it was not that proceeding from a heart at ease, and, after he shook hands with us, he smiled no more. He is grown paler than he was.

Though his look bespoke no happiness, his conversation differed from it. He said, he had not been so tranquil or happy in his life, as since he left us at Grove Park; that he was aware that we knew him better than we did then; but that he was by no means in a state of mind to enjoy society, which still appeared to him an heterogeneous and malignant assemblage; that he felt himself extremely honoured by the note Augusta had written; that he was sensible of indelible obligations to her, which were daily increasing, and that with my permission, he would take the liberty of thanking her himself in a letter from Belmont, whither he was going shortly, as circumstances compelled him to postpone his intention of travelling till the summer. We persuaded him, without being too urgent, to join a party at Godfrey's, but in vain; he excused himself,

saying, however, that he would pay his respects to the ladies before he left London.

His mildness and his manners were, if possible, more amiable than on the day at Grove Park ; and I incline to ascribe this to his pursuits, which are nothing less than a revision of his understanding, and an investigation of the truths of religion ; the study of which he attributes to a wish expressed by Augusta, on his taking leave at Grove Park. The note to which he alluded was but a few lines, merely saying that he had met some success in *the task* she had set him.

Such is the state of a young man in whom nature and fortune seemed to have combined their stores to produce happiness : the first has endowed him with genius and fine feelings, the latter, with immense wealth and accomplishments, mental and personal, rarely matched : — together they have made him extremely amiable ; — and all this is spoiled by the want of a guide in childhood, by some miserable boyish imprudence, folly, crime, whatever it may be, his sensibility to the

ticed it to me, and perhaps they have no suspicion of it, as they think so highly of the understanding of their cousin, that they can have no idea of any danger from susceptibility. This too was my opinion, but it is changed. Darrell occupies her mind. She ascribes all her feelings to gratitude, and to a wish that he should be convinced of the truths of religion.

Of these feelings she makes no secret ; she expressed them to himself at Grove Park, since which she has not seen him ; but I perceive that the thought of him influences her conduct to others. She will hear no one speak ill of him without defending him ; she, in one instance, felt so much that her health was affected, on which account we made an excursion to Bath ; she will not listen to George or Caroline on the subject of a lover, though they know more than one who, on the least encouragement, would declare themselves. In short, my dear Pisani, it strikes me, that she is cherishing feelings which may have a fatal influence upon the happiness of her life, and something must be done to counteract their

effect. I am loth to raise the idea in Godfrey's mind, and I mean to continue my own observations a little longer; and if, in the gay circles of London, I find her continue reserved to all the young men introduced to her, I will open my mind to George, and consult with him.

With respect to Darrell himself—he admires her certainly, and respects her, but that is all; he avoids her, as he does the rest of us, though not more pointedly; and it is very evident, that she has not made an equal impression upon his heart. If she had, I confess to you that, so far from seeing an objection, I should be ready to promote a union, which would completely restore him to society and to happiness, and would settle my dear Augusta most desirably in my view, and as I have said, I believe according to the feelings of her own heart. But I have no expectation of it, and I must take the other course; that is, to take care that my child's hopes of happiness in this life may not be blasted.

When I tell you, my dear friend, that it is on this account that I am going to



make my request to you, I trust you will not find the granting of it too difficult an exertion. As the spring advances, I shall turn my thoughts to Grove Park ; now, George and Caroline cannot always be with me there. You already understand me, Pisani. You know how our girls love each other. You know they were brought up as sisters. I shall be obliged to stay in England, at least all this year. Augusta is my comfort, — is my life. Can you come to us this spring ? If you cannot, will you send Angelica to Augusta ? I will myself bring them both to Signa next year, when we will settle our future plans. There is a family of the name of Dorrington, now passing the winter at Naples, who are coming to England in April next, perhaps sooner ; they are friends of Godfrey's, who says, they would be happy to take care of Angelica, and he will write to them on the subject. This difficulty being cleared, I hope there will be no other in the way. Tell my dear Angelica in confidence, that it is to her care I wish to trust the heart of her own beloved sister and friend.

We have been in London a little more than a week. It is quite new to me. I have not time just now to give you any account of it, or to tell you how I feel in it. The parliament is met. I have been several times down to the house of commons with George ; I could not but think of former times, when Pitt and Fox, Burke, Sheridan, and Windham, drew the attention of the house, I might say of the kingdom, — of the world. I remember that when we lost those brilliant stars the nation felt a kind of vacuum. Admiration had been wound up for years to its highest pitch — no wonder it should fall for a time. At present the house has recovered its brilliancy ; it possesses first-rate talents, and, I believe, first-rate virtues. I have great pleasure in attending the debates. I will say more of the speakers in both houses, when I have more leisure. I must also defer other subjects, though I know them to be interesting to you.

Before I conclude, I must tell you that I have received another letter from Count Olivastro ; who, in spite of a very

positive answer to his last, continues to solicit my interference. He is coming to England. From his letter I should not be surprised at seeing him in the course of this month. It is absolutely madness, and makes me very uneasy. He talks of appointments, and I know not what. For heaven's sake, keep him at Florence, if you can and he should be still there when you receive this. Augusta has a letter for Angelica ready. Adieu, my dear Pisani; give our most affectionate remembrances to the Marchesa and your sister, and believe me ever

Your sincere friend

GILBERT SAVILLE.

## LETTER XLV.

*Angelica to Augusta.*

Signa.

MY DEAREST AUGUSTA,

**Y**OUR dear interesting letters, dated both at Manor-House, arrived, I know not by what chance, together. — And it is fortunate for me that they did, as several things in the first would have left me in painful suspense, which the other prevented. Your cousins are delightful beings : — I envy and love them — tell them so for me ; — say I feel the affection they bestow on you as bestowed on myself, and that I hope some day, not very distant, to embrace them and tell them so myself. — Kiss your little Caroline for me again and again, and do this every morning, and call it Angelica's kiss, that it may be impressed on her mind as well as on her lips.

With what pleasure have I again been reading your letters ! I will not connect the idea of any pain with them, though the character of that paradoxical creature, so good and so bad, making his dependents so happy and himself so miserable, avoiding the world because he thinks them malignant, and the Manor-House circle because he finds them benignant, so agreeable to company, so disagreeable to himself, does unavoidably create some, and to say the truth, my dear Augusta, not a little. From all you have said of him, I believe him incapable of a bad action ; and the impression left upon me by his conduct in France is confirmed and improved by the light in which your letters place him. It is not the suspicious appearances at Malvern Wells, that are the grounds of the pain he creates. — I think you are in too much haste to take as proof what may be accident : I agree with that amiable woman, Lady Mount-Vernon, that he is slandered ; and I am sure that he has ten thousand times more virtue than his slanderers. What gives pain, though this may be called paradoxical on my side, is

his making himself agreeable, and manifesting the most virtuous and engaging dispositions without supporting his pretensions to the character they merit, without confronting detraction and brushing off from him the dirt with which it has spattered him. — And whatever has been really wrong should be repented and absolved : — nothing base could have ever proceeded from such a man ; and what fault would not be eclipsed by such virtues ?

You see, Augusta, I am almost, if not altogether, as great an enthusiast in the cause of Sir Francis Darrell, as you are, and judging of you by myself, and by my knowledge of you, I think, with all your enthusiasm, there is no danger of your becoming a love-sick maiden, though I own I am very much surprised at not meeting, in any page of these letters, a single lover. Where are the eyes, and the ears, and the hearts, of all your countrymen ? Can what we have heard of them be true, that love in England is the offspring of calculation, and that arithmetic is the primer of courtship ? Or have you

lost your beauty and sense, and become reserved and repulsive? Why does not this preserver of yours, this Sir Francis Darrell, rouse himself, and by proving that he has a heart worthy of you, tempt you, not to be a love-sick damsel, but to trust your happiness in his hands? Though I know you are no falling-in-love Miss, I am not so certain as you seem to be, that he is all esteem and respect, without a grain of love. Pardon me, my dearest sister, for talking thus; I would not for my life sport with your feelings:— I seriously begin to think, by meditating on the letters before me, that I was mistaken in concluding formerly, that Sir Francis was not likely to be a visitor at Grove Park. I am of opinion, in spite of his reserve and seclusion, that his present conduct indicates more than *you* suspect. I suspect that you have made a very strong impression on his heart, and that a consciousness of being unworthy of you has raised in him the ambition of meriting a heart, which he must have seen is not to be gained without peculiar merit. I would fain think well of this man,

and encourage this thought. — Think what a double victory it would be, if the result of his study should be the recovery of his soul, and the conquest of his heart! Without the former, I am sure you never will value the latter; — but, if he is in earnest, he will find the one as he loses the other. With a candid and sincere desire to know God, no man will fail: If he proceed so far, he will find the rest easy: then let him come and reason with our dear Abate Cevello, who will convince him of the truths of our religion, and completely render him worthy of my dear Augusta.

Am I not suffering my first feelings to run away with my reason and my recollection? Augusta will forgive me: — let my thoughts run how they will, she knows their source, and that my love can correct without concealing them. — Yes, they are hasty thoughts — I must correct them. His appearance in the bower at Grove Park, his mysterious cup, his agitation, his abrupt flight, betoken madness, or unexpiated guilt. — No, no; my dear Augusta must not think



of him; — yet she may rejoice, as I shall, if the exertions of this unhappy man should be attended with conviction and comfort; and none that sincerely seek it by expiation will be denied it. My heart tells me that, however justly I have written this last sentence, it was dictated by a degree of harshness: — the truth is, I am inclined to love the man for what he has done, and what I know of him; but the something behind the veil produces an occasional shudder.

The generous manner of his putting my dear Mr. Saville in possession of Grove Park is beyond all praise, and, with the event in France, renders it but natural, nay a duty, that you should be anxious for his welfare, both here and hereafter. The account of your arrival and of your reception brought tears into my eyes: — your father's feelings, your own, the sympathy of your cousins, Sir Francis's whole conduct, would find their way to a heart much less attached to you than Angelica's. All, all at Grove Park and the country in which it is, is charming, with one exception: — the bower, the

urn, the secret box in the pedestal, — all this I could wish obliterated from the picture. A bower and an urn are not displeasing objects, but of the uses of them you should have been kept completely ignorant. I do not think, my dear Augusta, that you or Mr. Saville, circumstanced as you were, could have done otherwise than you did; but it would have been better, could it have been avoided, for these emblems and memorials of crime or mystery will occasionally disturb your fancy. Had the communication been premeditated I should have reprobated the conduct of Sir Francis; — but of any such intention he was completely innocent, and his actions, when accident led you to the spot, were the effects of passion amounting to madness. The secret that preys upon his mind is evidently of a dreadful nature; and I wish to Heaven it was in your power to banish from yours all the circumstances which have unfortunately come to your knowledge.

Before I quit this subject I will make

one observation respecting the state of Sir Francis Darrell's irreligious opinions:— he must have entered upon the study of religion, with a *wish* not to find it true:— immortality must be a terror to bad men, and he, who has no interest in finding that he has a soul, will be ready to receive arguments why there should be no God. It is sad to think how successful the wish was—it is clear he has not been the less miserable for it. Now, my dear Augusta, if he has renewed his religious study, with a *wish* to find religion true, we may confidently hope that the reverse of this will follow: the repentance that secures pardon will remove terror from immortality; the divinity will be rendered manifest by redemption; and in looking to a glorious existence in another life he will be happy in this. I fervently pray that he may be successful; and if he is *sincere* he will be, for *sincerity* is the essence of all religion.

Let us now turn to a different subject—to a man not unacquainted with religion, but unacquainted with himself—your amiable Mrs. Dartford's son. You judged

rightly in supposing me apprised sooner than you of my swain's desertion, and of Clementina Belvoce's triumph; but what will you say when I tell you that she is *unseraphised*, and that her votary is kneeling at the shrine of a certain French beauty, Mademoiselle Cornelié le Grand, one of the best dancers and tallest women of her country? There is a report that he is actually married to her. I hope it is not true for Mrs. Dartford's sake, and you must keep this from her at present. I hope so too for his own sake, for he certainly is amiable, and has virtues which in time would conquer his vanity and fickleness. She is the daughter of the French resident at Naples; and the enchantment it seems springs from her toe. Oh! what a source of love! I know he admires good dancing, and is a fine dancer himself—so together they have kicked poor Clementina out of her seraphic promotion.

I know nothing of the present angel:—she is remarkably tall, but well proportioned, inclining to *embonpoint*; her countenance is singular, and very unlike the

*tournure* of the French ; her complexion may be rather called white than fair ; and, her cheeks being regularly supplied with toilet bloom, her face is compared to an alabaster doll ; her eye-brows are light, yet her eye is of a sparkling black like jet ; to finish the picture her hair surrounds her face in flaxen curls. Do not suppose Augusta that I am humourously collecting traits from my own imagination, or that I believe the picture to be very like the original. I give you the copy from a prejudiced painter : — it is the description sent to my mother by Signora Belvoce ; — you may therefore suspect it put together for the occasion.

From what you have said of Mrs. Dartford, and indeed from what I myself know of her son, I really take an interest in his fate ; and it would give me great pleasure to send him back unmarried to his mother ; of whom you give so pleasing an idea, that I should be happy to know her, and who knows how soon I may pay her a visit at the Priory, though not as a daughter. Present my respects to her. I am quite pleased with Mr.

Vernon's courting by proxy for her, and I smiled at his own gallant compliment.

How well you have grouped the Mount-Vernon family! But I am frightened when I look at Lady Barbara, and her horse in the air, over a gate, till I see her explaining the mystery of it by the same means as the church-going of Mrs. Godfrey, your mass-going, Mr. Vernon's jesting, and Mr. Dartford's "offering himself to every pretty girl he meets, — *all habit*, my dear." Mr. Vernon must be an agreeable man. — I do not dislike his brother; but Lady Mount-Vernon is indeed a character to study, and to emulate, and I think the Marchioness of N\*\* entitled to the highest respect and admiration. Lady Mount-Vernon is a paragon: — her virtue and good sense have in a great degree assimilated her husband's character with her own. If she had shown disgust at the sports to which he is devoted, he would have sunk into the mere huntsman, and she would have been lost among the dregs of fashion: — the virtue she displays he sees, and seeing must love, and loving must share, and so

becomes *congenial* in essentials with her — so that your principle is still without exception, — “congeniality is necessary to a happy marriage.” Her manner of thinking respecting Sir Francis Darrell charms me, and I have adopted it. Her thoughts of Lady Betty Bramblebear are charitable, and do her honour. — I would not be in haste to credit the reports you have heard. You have made me love Lady Mount-Vernon, and I could dwell upon her character much longer, but I must think of drawing my letter to a conclusion.

I wish, my dear Augusta, that I could repay the interest of your letters by sending you equally interesting accounts from the banks of the Arno — but there is little novelty in Florence, and my domestic life flows on just as when you were here, except that I want my dear sister, whose place I have found no Caroline to supply.

Olivastro is here: — we have seen him but seldom: — he is now going again to Vienna. I wish he would recover himself for his family's sake: the violence of his dispo-

sition is turned into a gloomy sullenness. What folly, what madness, is it for any man to persevere in a passion which he is convinced is not reciprocal ! And as to the hope of overcoming a resolution decidedly taken, it is not only an insult, but barbarity.— I would not see him if he comes to England, if I were you.

I have reserved a piece of intelligence to give a relish to the conclusion of my letter. My father has gained his law-suit at last ; and, although it has cost him a great deal, the difference to his fortune is greater even than we supposed before you left Signa. This has put him into spirits, and he talks of visiting Grove-Park with delight, when all his affairs are arranged ; — but it is long to look forward to another year at the beginning of a new one. I wish our bodies could be as expeditious as our souls.— how I would embrace you and your dear Caroline in the twinkling of an eye ! But, as it is, we must as you say, manage to twirl the one after the other over the surface of the earth between Grove-Park and Signa : exercise and change of air



are the best prescriptions for health, and what is an Alp or two in the way!

I long for your next letter; to hear more of your progress in English society, and to be again in thought with you, your cousins, and the friends whom you love. — I want to hear more of Sir Francis Darrell, of Lady Mount-Vernon, Mrs. Dartford: — make me known to them, and keep me up in their minds. Should Sir Francis adhere to his resolution of travelling, and come to Florence, I will do every thing in my power to show him how much I feel myself indebted to him in the person of my dear Augusta, and I would all but tell him that I love him, in spite of his making himself hateful.

I have just seen a gentleman attached to the British embassy at Florence, who is returned from Naples. — By him I find that Mr. Dartford is not married to Mademoiselle Cornelié, but that there is a talk of a marriage, which he did not deny. Nor is the lady what Signora Belvoce describes her. She is not so white; her hair is not flaxen; her eyebrows not light; and her eyes not black;

but she is very, very tall, and well made for dancing. The disappointed Signora of Rome has been indulging a humourous vein, that's all.

A thousand loves from the Marchese, my mother, and my aunt. May heaven shower blessings on my dear, dear Augusta, prays her

Most affectionate sister,

ANGELICA.

## LETTER XLVI.

*Augusta to Angelica.*

Hanover Square, Feb.

MY DEAR ANGELICA,

You shall again receive two letters together, but this must be a short one, and shall go under the same cover with that which I wrote last week. You will perceive by this, that the letter I was expecting from you is arrived. It has in most respects given me very great pleasure, but certainly much pain on the subject of the two young men whose characters are so strikingly and painfully opposite. The one immoveably fixed to an unattainable object, the other perpetually changing his object, attainable or not; Olivastro becoming morose from disappointment; Mr. Dartford, more airy, gay, and volatile at every change. I hope

that something has happened to prevent the foolish step the latter was about to take, and the suspense on account of Mrs. Dartford will make me look the more anxiously for your next letter. Were it not for her, I should not be able to treat the subject seriously; and, even as it is, I cannot help laughing at the humourous spite of Clementina's mother. I trust that Mademoiselle Cornelia is now dancing to the same tune she made Signora Belvoce sing; and glad should I be to hear that our *Amante inconstante* was safe back at Florence, and under your care. If he is so fortunate as to escape this time, tie him, or cage him, I again beseech you, in Mrs. Dartford's name, till you have a good opportunity of sending him home, unless my dear Marchese will be prevailed upon either to come to England in the spring or send you to us, as I find my father has written to request, and then I commission you to bring him; in which case you may either prepare yourself with the Marchese's and Marchesa's consent to

make him their son, or neglect that caution, as seems best to you.

To be serious, my dear Angelica — let me congratulate you and my dear friends at Signa on the successful issue of their contest for the property of the Marchesa's uncle, and let me hope that the business which is likely to engage your father and mother for some time will induce them to comply with my father's request and my anxious desire, to let you come to me with the family whom he has mentioned to the Marchese. Before he wrote we thought of the difficulty which would arise from want of a proper opportunity, and my cousin George fortunately knew that Mr. and Mrs. Dorrington were to return early this year. I know my dear kind friends will comply: I feel as if I should have my Angelica in my arms before the month of May. It shall from this time be one of my pleasures to anticipate our meeting, and all the dear and agreeable consequences of it.

I will briefly notice the points of your

letter before I attend to other circumstances which interest me more, I fear you will think, than they should. You are certainly right in your opinion that Sir Francis Darrell should confront detraction, and that whatever he has done wrong should be repented and absolved, for he could never have done a base action, and he has virtues that should place him high, very high, among men. But you are as certainly wrong, Angelica, when you surmise that he considers me in any way but with esteem and respect. It is clear that I have made no other impression on his mind; and, though I may have given the first impulse to his reflection, it is his own understanding and the importance of the stake that actuate his perseverance. No, my love, he will never offer himself to me, and you do me justice, Angelica, in believing that I never will unite myself to a body without a soul. The events of that morning were accidental: neither he nor I was to blame, but I will consult with my father about removing the

monument, if it can be done without hurting the feelings of Sir Francis.

You say I must not think of him : — indeed I do not at all, as *you mean* — I do much in *other respects*. He is *not* mad, Angelica — I hope he is not criminal. — I see he is unhappy ; — let us not be severe, my sister. — He does, he does *wish* to find religion true, and you are right, as you always are, in saying that he will find it so. I knew you would agree in Lady Mount-Vernon's opinion of him ; I knew you would be delighted with that most amiable, that first of female characters ; and as for Sir Francis, they may call him what they will, but he is *not hateful*.

Having replied to your letter, my dear Angelica, I will now add a few lines on the progress of my London life. We have been here upwards of a fortnight. Unused to racket, — the bustle, the noise, the perpetual motion of a town life, absolutely make me giddy. I have never experienced any thing like it before. At Paris, the hotels are more retired and quiet,

and besides I was there but a short time, and much of that time was occupied with extraordinary circumstances. With respect to London, I cannot take this opportunity of giving you a particular account of it : I have hardly time to say what I wish respecting myself, and I shall presently be obliged to put down my pen to dress for dinner.

And who, Angelica, do you think is to dine with us ? I know you have guessed. I know you will tell me that I should not have put the question for any body else. — You are right, then, in your guess. Sir Francis Darrell is to dine with George to-day. When I wrote the letter which this will accompany I did not know that I should see him all the winter. When my father and George saw him on business, he said he would have the honour of paying his respects to the ladies, and these respects were paid by his leaving a double set of cards at the door. After this, George sent him a pressing invitation, and engaged Mr. Vernon to endeavour to bring him. — He succeeded, and



the invitation was accepted, so that he will be here this evening, between six and seven o'clock, for in London they call their suppers dinners. I shall not close my letter to-night, and shall add the occurrences of the evening. We expect no other company; — I believe Mr. Vernon stipulated with George and Caroline for a strictly family dinner.

Lady Mount-Vernon is in town; I have seen her twice, and with encreasing affection. Never was there a being of more real merit, with less assuming manners. A natural dignity precludes all appearance of diffidence, without marking the slightest confidence or self-will; her sentiment seems reason without the necessity of argument to support it; her conversation is full of pleasantry and light turns of wit, but she listens more than she speaks. Her town-house is in Park-Lane; Lady Barbara Lewis is staying with her; she gives a ball next week, to which we are going. I must lay down my pen — I am writing in a convenient

dressing-room near a good fire, adjoining my bed-room, whither I retire when I would avoid company.

\* \* \* \* \*

11 o'clock.

A slight head-ach, which was more noticed by Caroline than felt by myself, has served me as a reason for retiring early — but I cannot go to bed till I have unburdened my mind to my dear sister. I have passed an agitated day, Angelica. I am agitated still, but I charge you by our dear friendship, not to mistake my feelings, not to suspect that I can admit into my heart sentiments and an affection for a man in whose heart there is evidently nothing of that nature towards me. — But the agitation is of a pleasing kind. I more and more admire and esteem him, and so will you too, though his success has not been proportionate to the eagerness of our wishes, to the fervency of our prayers. Far, however, from seeing cause to despair, I think I see Providence,

gracious to his sincerity, working gradually on his understanding.

When I laid down my pen to dress, I little suspected what was to befall me. — At the usual time I went to the drawing-room, expecting to find Caroline there, but, to my astonishment, I found only Sir Francis Darrell, who was standing near the fire with a newspaper in his hand. As I opened the door he looked towards me, and recognized me with a bow, but without advancing. The sudden meeting, and his being entirely alone, gave me a slight shock; but the distance and reserved salutation dispelled it even before I reached the fire-place. It is the first time I have seen him since he left me in the bower at Grove Park alone. His countenance wore a very different appearance — it was calm, his brow was smooth, and there was a smile on his lips. — He looked pale. I spoke first, expressing a hope that I saw him well. After the usual words, I asked him if my cousin or my father knew he was come.

“Yes,” said he, “we came in toge-

ther just now, and they are only gone up to their dressing-rooms — they will be here presently.”

Why did I feel any awkwardness at being alone with him? I certainly did; and, in consequence, I said that I would go and bring Mrs. Godfrey. He bowed, as if he understood my motive, and at first said nothing to detain me — but as I turned to go,

“Let me,” said he, “take this opportunity, Miss Saville, of saying what I cannot so well say before others; I shall perhaps not have another —”

I stood motionless, and looked at him in expectation of what he was going to say, the introduction to which was rather extraordinary to my ears.

“Whatever others may think of me,” said he, “pray do you believe me when I say, that in the little experience I have had in life of what some call pleasure, others happiness, I have found nothing equal to the sensation which some transient consciousness of a virtue of some kind gives to the heart, and that sensation I owe to you at this moment. Gra-

titude I consider as a virtue as well as an emotion ; it is a virtue, for it is not in general agreeable to the malignant nature of our species, and men do not like to feel it, as is apparent by daily experience. It has not, in general, found admission in my own heart, and so far I confess it has been bad, but it shall be so no longer in this respect — I think I may say it is so no longer. I feel my heart full of it to your father and to your cousins, for their tolerating such a spirit as mine, but it is to you that I feel most grateful.”

“How to me?” said I.

“Have you not brought me to my senses?” he replied. “Have you not taught me to think that there is such a thing as happiness, to *wish* for it *for ever*, and more than half to *hope* it?”

“Oh! hope it altogether,” cried I, “and it will be yours; and, though I cannot take this merit to myself, the reflection will be to me a source of great delight. If gratitude is so sweet, think what pleasure I owe to you.”

“But how far does your action surpass mine! I accidentally rescued a

body; you, with anxious premeditation, which does you honour, have perhaps rescued a soul."

"Sir Francis," cried I, with delight, "this charms me."

"Softly," said he; "I said *perhaps*, and I will not have you think me more advanced in *my task* than I am; the *full wish* and the *partial hope* have not sufficiently influenced my understanding, my stubborn understanding, which no prize on earth or in Heaven can tempt or bend. Look at the mass of mankind; have they souls? And if they had, what sort of spirit would it be? Is it such as would deserve happiness even in this life? And if not, how can an eternity of bliss be prepared for it?"

He said this with a mild seriousness of countenance; then, throwing a very pleasing smile into it, he added,

"I am indeed but too much inclined to draw my reasonings from the being I look at, whose every feature and every sentiment bespeak a soul, and whose virtues deserve a heaven."

I felt a colour come into my face; —

he had never before paid me a compliment, and it was so unlike him, that I was greatly surprised.

“Nay,” cried I, “do not turn so important an observation into the language of common compliment.”

He exclaimed — “Common compliment!” — paused a moment, then said — “True, these are words of course, and should never have been used to Miss Saville — Pardon.”

I wished to carry him back to the subject. However feeble my power of reasoning, I was desirous of suggesting my own thoughts, which, if not convincing, might have raised new ideas, and his own strength of understanding might have pursued them with success — but, at the moment he asked my pardon, Caroline came in. I would have continued the conversation before her, and with her assistance, had he not clearly avoided the renewal of it, by going forward to meet her, and afterwards by persevering in general topics. He seemed pleased with the manner in which Caroline received him, and Mr. Vernon soon

after coming in, followed by my father and George, we were immediately summoned to dinner, and sat down a party of six. It was not the less agreeable for being small, and had the premeditated object been a conciliation of mutual regard, nothing could have been better calculated. The pleasing attentions of Caroline, the friendly manner of my father and George, the peculiar turns of the conversation, were all adapted to gain his confidence and regard; and his friend Mr. Vernon was congenially active in promoting the ease and openness of friendship through the day. In the evening we met in the drawing-room — he seemed quite at home — there was not the slightest appearance of constraint — he chatted with ease and on every subject; during the serving of coffee he went of his own accord to the piano, and touched and varied all the chords with an accurate and delicate finger. Caroline requested him to play. He assured her that he could not, and that he had displayed the whole of his accomplishment



in showing that he was not unacquainted with the principles of harmony.

"Alas!" added he, "I have never known how to make use of them."

This pointed allusion brought tears to my eyes, and my heart was so full at the thought, and the manner in which it was expressed, that I would have indulged the flow of them, but for the consciousness that it would have made a scene. I saw that Caroline partook my feeling. I believe we all were struck with the words.

He was still sitting before the piano, when Lord and Lady Mount-Vernon were announced. It is impossible for me to paint to you the sudden, the immediate change that took place in his countenance and deportment. His smile and his ease forsook him; — something like his Paris knitted brow appeared, and he looked as if he meditated an escape from torture — he rather eyed than looked at them as they came forward. Their visit was unexpected, but proved to be a design of Mr. Vernon's, to entrap his friend into a ball. He knew that a card

would be a snare easily avoided, and he knew also that if the invitation was made personally, in Lady Mount-Vernon's manner, the charm would be irresistible. Certain that she did not think ill of Sir Francis, and that she was disposed to give him a relish for society, he had led her and his brother into this little conspiracy against the misanthropy by which his friend was unhappily ruled. He was silent, till Lord Mount-Vernon, addressing him, regretted not seeing him lately in Herefordshire, and hoped that he was not going to desert them altogether. He evidently did not give this speech any credit for cordiality: he barely said,

"Your Lordship's very good."

"I shall judge whether you really think so, Sir Francis," said Lady Mount-Vernon, "if you will give me reason to call you *very good*, by complying with a request I shall take this opportunity of making."

Looking at her with a mild but serious countenance, he said he was afraid that he could never convince her that he had any title to that epithet, yet there

were few whom he more wished to think that he had.

"That is a very agreeable compliment to me, Sir Francis; and I say this perhaps more sincerely than you do, as I am not apt to compliment."

"Believe me, it is no compliment, Madam," said he.

"Then you will comply with my request?"

"If in my power."

"I give a ball this day week"—

"I assure your Ladyship," cried he, interrupting her, and supposing the invitation given,

"And I am sure," cried Mr. Vernon, interrupting him, and supposing the excuse he was about to make, "that you are not engaged."

"My dear Vernon," said he, "you know I am no dancer."

"You need not dance," said Lady Mount-Vernon, "unless you like. I see you would rather not come, as to any pleasure that is to be derived from a ball — comply as a gratification to me, to say nothing of our friends here."

“Lady Mount-Vernon, Mrs. Godfrey, this is really too good, too flattering ; — my eyes are opened — I am not to be deceived — it is not to a ball that I am invited — it is to society — what shall I say ? It is not easy to alter the disposition ; I have some ungracious habits to conquer, and many enemies to meet ; — but I must be worse than I am to be insensible of such exertions in favour of an unhappy mind. — I will endeavour to deserve the friendship of this circle.”

This unexpected openness affected every one present. There was a short silence, as if no one knew what to say, till that angel of a woman, Lady Mount-Vernon, with a look expressive of the feeling he had raised, said,

“Sir Francis, you have rendered it impossible to speak otherwise than in a serious tone. — I shall be happy to see you at my ball ; but it is, as you have rightly judged — the invitation given in this manner is to prove to you that your friends are very anxious to see you filling the station your birth, your fortune, and

your acquirements have marked you for. You will not, I trust, refuse us."

He was overpowered by the emotion caused by this speech — the tears rushed to his eyes — he wiped them away with his handkerchief: —

"This is too much for me," cried he; "I cannot bear it; — this, Vernon, is your doing."

There was now a tear in every eye. My father, George, Mr. Vernon, and his brother, all spoke their feelings. Can feelings be painful and yet sweet? Yes, Angelica, mine were.

Sir Francis had risen, and Mr. Vernon was speaking, when Lady Mount-Vernon, who knows so well how to time and qualify circumstances, whispered me to go to the piano-forte — but perceiving what a task she had given me, and which indeed I should have declined, without noticing my inability to comply, she went herself, and during her execution of a sonata, the conversation was turned. — Towards the conclusion of the piece, she requested her carriage might be ordered. On rising she said, "she could not stay

to hear me sing to-night," and giving no time for the return of painful feelings, she took leave, saying to Sir Francis, as she went away —

"Well, I shall expect you."

When she was gone, we all spoke of her with rapture. As for Mr. Vernon, he declares he is absolutely in love with his sister. Sir Francis regretted that he had not cultivated her friendship more. He staid but a short time after she went — he did not recover the ease he had acquired before her visit — he was thoughtful, and once I heard him in a whisper, ejaculate to himself — "Good God!" In wishing us good night, he said that he should certainly go to Lady Mount-Vernon's ball. Mr. Vernon went away with him — we afterwards, alone, had a short conversation on the day. My father and George resolved to do every thing in their power to give him a relish for society, and to check the malevolence of his enemies, and the equally injurious folly of no-meaning repeaters of malice.

Upon the whole, my dear Angelica, you see that it was not without reason I said, that though I had been agitated, my agitation was of a pleasing kind. The man to whom I am so much indebted, has thrown himself into the hands of Providence ; he is entering society with better feelings ; and, — Oh ! with what pleasure do I say it ! — he seems, in spite of whatever may have passed, to merit the esteem and happiness now breaking like a new day upon him.

It is late, and I will go to bed — in the morning I will write, *good-morrow*, and seal my packet to be dispatched with my father's letter to the Marchese.

\* \* \* \* \*

I have woke to horror, Angelica — the celestial vision is vanished — It was all a dream. — I dreamt he was an angel, I wake to find him a — Oh ! Heaven restrain my pen ! restrain my thoughts ! I know not what to write, or what to think — read the enclosed, which I have had

strength enough to copy ; read, my dear sister, and you will see that truth and falsehood, beauty and deformity, virtue and vice, are undistinguishable. Oh ! that you were here ! — I have not yet seen Caroline this morning — I am but just risen — I found the horrid note upon my table as I drew it to the fire which Madelena had been lighting — she it was who put it there — she received it this morning at the door, from a boy, who asked to speak particularly with my maid. She never saw him before, and knows nothing of him. — What shall I think ? Can it be malice ? Is he all deceit ? All art ? One part of the note bears too evident a mark of something wrong. He has spoken with levity of the effect of my gratitude. Gracious Heaven ! Did I kiss his hand, without washing away the kiss with tears ? Oh ! Angelica, my dear Angelica, my horror is unsupportable — Has he dared to speak lightly of me ? It cannot be — he cannot be such a hypocrite — No, I am led by excessive pain to wrong him. I must send for Caroline



— but I will first put up my letter, for it must go to-day. For Heaven's sake, come to me Angelica. — Come to

Your unhappy, affectionate

AUGUSTA.

## A NOTE,

*Addressed to Miss Saville.*

BEWARE, young lady — unperceived danger is the worst danger — you neither know yourself, nor your betrayer. Your romantic preservation has already cost you your heart; take care, or it will cost you more. Your *preserver* is born to be your destroyer — he is the most artful of men. He knows, and he says, that the kiss you gave his hand, came from your heart. The world are talking of it. He is well aware that you can only be won under the disguise of virtue and religion. Do not trust your ears; he has not an atom of either — he has at this very time an engagement of the heart. His design with respect to you is not yet ripe — Make

a proper use of this friendly communication, and then will the writer of it be entitled to the name of

Your

PRESERVER.

## LETTER XLVII.

*Augusta to Angelica.*

Hanover Square, Feb.

I WISH, my dearest Angelica, that I had not been in such haste to dispatch my last letter : — my father had desired to have it at breakfast to forward with his ; and, with the feelings I had on that morning, I did not foresee any circumstance that was likely to induce me to delay it. But I am notwithstanding angry with myself, for you will probably think I expressed the shock caused by the anonymous note in terms too strong ; and you will condemn me for being so easily agitated, and so ready to credit the malicious communication of a concealed informant. At the same time, my dear sister, you will allow that the thoughts raised by that note were sufficient to agi-

tate me, independent of all consideration respecting any engagement Sir Francis Darrell might have — his engagements concern not me, farther than as I take a sincere interest in the happy progress of his mind to all that is good. Even in that respect, I confess that the note shocked me extremely, but the idea that he could possibly be practising upon my heart — to be told that I had already lost it — to be warned against him as the most artful of villains — Oh ! my dear Angelica ! was not all this enough to raise feelings of the most painful kind, in the breast of your sister ? If then I have expressed myself with unusual violence, you will not, I am sure, draw conclusions unfavourable to the state of your Augusta's heart ; — you will not, like this vile anonymous scribbler, say that I have lost it. Lost it ! does a woman lose her heart ? What is meant by losing the heart ? Is it to love first, without a certainty of being loved ? Can a woman who respects herself do this ?

I would you were here, Angelica ! Oh ! how I wished for you on that painful

morning! After I had sealed my letter to you, I was going to send for Caroline, but having first read the note over again, I was struck with the consequences of her seeing it—I love her, most dearly love her, and I know not that I have a thought I would conceal from her—but when I reflected that the ideas which would be raised by the contents of the note would accompany her thoughts in whatever future intercourse the family might have with Sir Francis Darrell, and whenever he should be the subject of conversation, I hesitated:—what a relief would it have been to me had you been here! I did not, however, hesitate long upon the part I was to take—Caroline loves me, and although it was a degrading charge, she could not but know that it was a malicious unfounded one.—The consciousness of its having been made by a stranger might create some awkwardness in me, but never would she encrease it by her knowledge of it—she would rather help to take it off. Besides, even were we not upon these terms, it was incumbent upon me to make the circumstance known. In

making these reflections, however, I recovered coolness enough not to treat it with the importance my first impulse would have given it, by sending in a hurry for my cousin, and I determined to produce the note at breakfast with great composure. While I was dressing, my father sent for the letter that I had written to you, and it was dispatched that morning.

In spite of my resolution, I could not help being considerably affected in giving the note to Caroline, whom I found alone in the breakfast-room: — I said that I had received a letter which had shocked me very much, and that I could not account for being made the subject of such unjust and injurious observations.

“My dear Augusta,” said Caroline, when she had read it, “it is not only a very foolish, but a very wicked contrivance, intended to injure Sir Francis, as well as to insult you, — I would treat it with contempt.”

“As far as I can,” said I, — “but it is evident, that not only he is at-

tacked, but that I am talked of. If he is the man the note represents him, we ought never to see him again; and if he is slandered, which I believe, how shall I feel myself in company with him, with the consciousness of being said to be, as the note says?"

"It will be a painful feeling, I allow," replied Caroline, "but you must endeavour to overcome it by reflecting that he is not aware of it. We will consult my uncle and George."

"Who can the writer be," cried I, "and why pitch upon me for his malice, who have never injured him?" —

"Injured whom?" cried George, who came in at that moment.

On hearing the circumstance, he at first looked serious, but soon resuming his cheerful countenance :

"Aha! *Mia Signorina*," said he, jestingly, "you must take your share of the fruits of beauty and goodness: — this is a grand compliment to you; had you been ugly and vile, no envious minx would have treated you with this distinction."



"Envious minx!" cried I — "Do you then imagine it to be written by a woman?" —

"It was my first thought," said George, "for what but envy can be the cause of it?"

"Don't you think," said Caroline, "that there may be jealous men as well as envious women?" —

"I am sure there are," replied George, "but the fact is, that Lady Betty Bramblebear first came into my head."

"My dear George," exclaimed I, "do you imagine her capable of such an action? She must be lost to all sense of virtue, all delicacy, if she can be the author of such a note."

"It is not the first anonymous note she has been accused of," replied he: "it is pretty well known that her acquaintance with Darrell had its commencement that way."

"Oh!" cried I, "what must he think of our sex!"

"My dear Augusta," said George, "men will form their opinions according to their experience, and I fear that Sir

Francis's hitherto has not been very favourable to the ladies; but his fine understanding and good heart—and I am now perfectly convinced he possesses both—will rescue him from this error, if they have not already:—he is very young, only turned of five-and-twenty, and we must manage to give a new colour to the experience that *is to come*:—he has captivated me, and I have no doubt of his proving one of the first characters of his country. Lady Mount-Vernon will open his eyes; you and Caroline shall have a share in his conviction. Your father and I, with Vernon, and other friends, will endeavour to make him feel, that society is not the odious thing he may have had too good reason to believe it."

How nobly was this said of George! It gave me great pleasure. Dear Caroline said it was evident his nature was good, which I cordially echoed; but I could not help adding that it made me the more uneasy, to reflect that the person who could write me such a note, would not scruple to impress upon him

that I was the weak creature it represented.

"I do not think it likely," replied George, "for if it is, as I suspect, it would be against her own schemes." "I confess," continued he, "that that lady is so sunk in my opinion, that, although I agree with Lady Mount-Vernon, that one should not hastily shut the door against those with whom we are in social communication, I am persuaded it is already time to break off all intercourse with her: — vice and virtue cannot mix."

"Can it be," said I, "an attachment to Sir Francis Darrell, and the fear of losing his attentions that can have reduced her to such a contrivance as this?"

"Lose his attentions!" exclaimed he, "I will not answer for *her* attachment, but I am certain that he pays her no attentions; I know too, that the appearances at Malvern last autumn cost him infinite pain."

This opinion of George's corroborated Mr. Vernon's observations at the time;

but though I was pleased at it, I could not help regarding that it was clear the world thought there was some truth in it, or at least talked of it, or it would never have been the subject of the paragraph read at Mount-Vernon by Lord Mariton, though that had proved false.

"The *world*," replied George, "is a word of multifarious meaning, according to the persons using it:—in politics it means all who concern themselves with the affairs of government and connection of nations:—in divinity, it means polemical writers and readers:—in taste, it means those who discern, or pretend to discern, the sublime and beautiful in all their varieties, from the snow-capped summits of the Alps, to the bow-knot on your shoe, including all the regions of Fancy, the poet and the player, the musician and the dancer:—in love, it means the crowd who are vigilantly watching for faux-pas, and elopements; and it sometimes means a single person, which I believe to be the case, my dear Augusta, with your pre-

sent world, for I suspect that that paragraph was written and inserted by Lord Mariton. It was read and forgotten, with other paragraphs, except by himself, and we know his motive for talking of it at Mount-Vernon."

"It was of him, I thought," said Caroline, "when I alluded to jealous men in answer to your envious women, and it is as likely that the note should be his invention as the paragraph."

"It may be his," replied George, "for he is weak; and disappointment may have prompted this petty revenge: but of the two, I am more inclined to think it Lady Betty's."

"You surprise me," said I: "is it possible that, in a country like England, slander and falsehood are allowed such open and public means of injury? I can more easily account for the baseness of the note; — the secrecy of it is more natural, if any thing bad can be natural; the other seems to me a national insult."

"In England," said George, "no one is restrained from doing or saying

whatever he pleases. The only legal restriction that exists, consists in the fear of punishment : — punishments enough we have, perhaps too many, and too severe.”

“ I have always thought that it was better, when possible, to prevent than punish crimes.”

“ No doubt ; but the licentiousness of the ill-disposed and thoughtless finds means to vent itself in the jealousy for liberty of the well-disposed ; and in general the nation is not the worse for trusting the prevention of crimes to the influences of their moral and religious systems : — preventive laws there are, but of these there must first be a breach, before determined bad spirits can be got rid of.”

“ But what punishment,” said I, “ is there for the paragraph containing so vile a slander ?”

“ For slander,” replied George, “ there is a very severe one according to the circumstances of it ; but in this paragraph there is no direct slander : it is an insinuation so couched as not to be laid

hold of. But it is not only in cases where suspicion affords some ground for such annoyances, that the writers of the day give a loose to their pens ; some of the most virtuous and honourable characters are attacked with false insinuations, merely for entertaining a difference of opinion in politics."

"What is done," said I, "on such occasions?"

"It is become a principle," replied he, "among men of honour, not to suffer themselves to be annoyed by such low, wanton attacks, when they consist of insinuations which contain no direct application. They leave no stain or blemish."

"How comes it then," said I, "that Sir Francis Darrell has suffered so much from the world?"

"It is from himself," cried George, "that he has suffered. It was he that quarrelled with the world ; and the world will not be quarrelled with, without hitting some hard blows. The fact I take to be, that there is some real cause for self-reproach, which his sensibility

has nourished from an early period of his life, and cannot throw off. He entered the world, as it is called, telling it that he despised, hated, and defied it; — that men were monsters, and he one of them. The world took him at his word as to the last assertion, and did its utmost to give him a hideous shape, which amused the light and alarmed the good. This is the mystery of Darrell's situation; and from the stories which were told, whether well-founded or not, I was induced like many others to shut my door against him. What he may have to reproach himself with, I know not; I believe, whatever it may be, that there are few men who would not have discharged it from their minds long ago; and if ever there was a generous, humane, noble-minded, amiable fellow, it is Darrell."

I cannot express to you my delight at this speech of George's, which he concluded with great warmth. I felt the truth of it; and the images of the event in France, of the day at Grove Park, and of the evening on which Lady



Mount-Vernon called, passed rapidly through my mind. — “Yes, George,” thought I, for I did not express it, our attention being called to my father, “he is what you say.”

Here my father came in, and of course the subject was renewed. On reading the anonymous note, he was almost as much shocked as I had been. He said it was monstrous that the private feelings of individuals should be tortured by strangers and unthinking creatures, merely for the purpose of carrying their own disgraceful plans into execution. He was inclined to concur in George’s suspicion, from what he had seen and heard of Lady Betty. He observed, that such an infamous note as that, could not but throw me into a very awkward situation, whether the contents had been made known to Sir Francis or not; yet he trusted, he said, to the strength of my mind to defeat its malice, by erasing it, if possible, from my memory, and conducting myself as if I had never received it; and he concluded with an eulogium on Sir Francis Darrell

in the same strain, and as warmly as George's. I owned the pain I felt, but promised to do my best in acting as he advised, so that the mean, unworthy stratagem was foiled. At least I hope so, for I have not since seen Sir Francis, and what I have now to relate to you makes it more a hope than a certainty, for, though but a short conversation, it has made a very great impression on my mind. I will give it you as it took place.

After breakfast, my father and George left the room, while Caroline and I were standing by the fire, admiring two hand-screens which a friend of George's had just brought from Paris. As soon as we were alone, she looked at me with a smile, and, putting the screen she held in her hand over my face, she said :

"Those eyes of yours, Augusta, express more than you feel." —

"How do you mean?" cried I, a little surprised at the remark.

"I will tell you," replied she, "but first let me ask you, and I am sure you

will tell me sincerely, have you any idea of the passion of love?"

"What a question, Caroline?" —

"I mean," said she, "whether you have ever met in Italy, or England, with any man for whom you felt such a preference as might induce you to think of marriage?"

"This is a question I understand," said I, "and I will answer it very sincerely: — I never have."

"I am not sorry to hear it," said she, "for it is exactly the answer I wished. And now I will tell you what I mean by your eyes expressing more than you feel. When George spoke in such warm terms of Sir Francis, I am sure your emotion was gratitude, but your countenance expressed something more; — nay, don't shrink, my dear Augusta," continued she, taking my hand, "I do not mean *the passion of love* — but your eyes certainly glistened uncommonly. Now I wish what I am going to say may be agreeable to you; but, if not, I am sure you love me too well to be offended with me. You acknowledge

your heart to be completely free and disengaged."

"What are you about, Caroline?"

"To tell you what has come into my mind, and what would make me very happy."

As she said this, I looked very earnestly at her; I feared what was to follow, but there was such an affectionate smile upon her face, that all apprehension gave way to the love and confidence she inspired, and I felt prepared to talk to her upon the subject I anticipated.

"Will you, my dear coz," continued she, "allow me to go on?"

"My dear Caroline," cried I, "are you not my second self? — my other Angelica?"

"But the subject is very delicate," said she, "and one I know you would hardly think of considering yourself; — I will however go on. I believe you, when you say, you have no preference for any man that would induce you to think of marriage; but are you not sen-

sible of a preference that places one man above all others in your estimation and regard?"

I returned her dear affectionate smile, and I surprised her with my reply, though she expected the utmost candour from me.

"I *am*, my dear Caroline," said I, "and that man is Sir Francis Darrell, and my eyes did not belie me when they told you so, on George's praises of him; but do not, my dear cousin, mortify me so much as to suspect me of being in love; leave that for Lady Betty."

"It would mortify me as well as you," said my dear Caroline, "if your disposition were that of a falling-in-love young lady; but you may without that go as far as I do, and in the same sense allow yourself to love and be captivated. Now I declare to you that both George and I are captivated with him and love him; and I will treat you with such unbounded candour as to tell you, that I have brought on this conversation from George's

having said to me, after my uncle left us last night, "I would give the world if Augusta were his wife!"

Heavens, Angelica! what words! Your Augusta the wife of Sir Francis Darrell! and from the mouths of Caroline Godfrey and George!

"I see your surprise," continued she; "but I also see with pleasure, that it is not accompanied with any sign of dissatisfaction."

Indeed, my surprise was so great that I could make no immediate answer, and she went on speaking.

"I participate George's feelings," said she; "I would give the world you were his wife. To make use of an expression too often used improperly, — 'You seem to me formed for each other:' you, to recover for him happiness, by uniting with love those principles of religion, which alone can restore peace to a wounded spirit; he, to appreciate the double prize he would obtain in you."

However unmerited this praise, my

dear Angelica, it was no compliment of Caroline to me. She loves me with a partiality that gave her expression all the value of sincerity. She continued :

“ My dear Augusta, I do not mean to advise you to lay yourself out to captivate him ; it is beneath you ; nor is it necessary. I think you have already done that without any premeditated effort : what I could wish, what I do wish you to do, is to admit the thought into your mind with a sufficiently favourable bias to give me the pleasure of hoping that, if circumstances led to a declaration on his part —”

I here shook my head.

“ Why do you shake your head ?” cried she : “ as you have no previous prepossession, would not you make us happy, supposing my uncle of our opinion ?”

I own I felt a pleasure in listening to Caroline, and therefore did not interrupt her ; but when she put the question in this manner I could not help saying :

"Has my father joined in your wish?"

"I have not seen him since, but in company with you," replied she; "but I have no doubt he will."

"Oh! I hope not," cried I; "I hope not. Indeed he will not, for he knows it is not in my power."

"Not in your power?"

"You see, Caroline," said I, "that I have listened to you, not only without dissatisfaction, but with an attention from which you may suppose, if you please, that your wish would not meet much opposition from me. You know, that I agree with you in opinion respecting the merit, and amiable manners of Sir Francis Darrell, but you forget, my dear cousin, the insuperable bar between us. I can never be his wife. He does not even suffer the character of Christian to be given to him. I think not of marriage; but if ever I am induced to do so, I will have no husband who is not a complete Christian."

"But that," cried Caroline, "is my hope."



"I fear," said I, "that your hope would stop short of mine."

"I understand you," said she; "but, my dear Augusta, we know that marriages frequently take place between persons of your church and ours; and, indeed, I understand very happy ones."

"I could not be happy," replied I; "and if it affects my happiness in some degree now, what would it do in the relation you wish! Indeed, Caroline, it must not be."

"I will not say you are too rigid," said she, "but time and reflection—"

I again shook my head.

"Well!" cried she, "we will drop the conversation at present, resolving, at least, to do what we can to restore him to a state of comfort, and to make him a complete Christian."

"What would I not give to do that?" cried I.

We then resolved to act, in respect to Lady Betty, as if the note had never

been received; and we persuaded ourselves that Sir Francis had no suspicion of its contents.

Good night to my dear Angelica.

AUGUSTA.

## LETTER XLVIII.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Mr. Godfrey.*

May Fair. . . .

MY DEAR SIR,

NEVER, I believe, was man more peculiarly circumstanced than I am, though it is not difficult for me to trace the causes of my peculiar situation. They are, indeed, evident enough; but the situation itself is most singular. Is it credible that the man who last year was execrated, who was talked of as a fiend, and shunned as a corrupter, should now be absolutely courted into friendship by two such families as yours and Lord Mount-Vernon's? should, at this moment, be an object of interest in the mind of one of the purest and most sensible of women? It is, however, the fact; I

am proud of it, and could I be happy, I could find on earth no greater cause of happiness.

I fear, my dear Mr. Godfrey, that you, and your worthy uncle and cousin, ascribe more merit to certain actions of mine, than is their due; and I am sensible that it is those actions that have produced such feelings towards me, which I confess have had a very extraordinary effect upon my mind. What I have done, and what I do, of the nature which has gained your kindness, have their source in selfish feelings; and I know myself too well to ascribe them to genuine generosity. Wealth is nothing to a man without peace of mind; I have it, and it is nothing to me, except as I make it a small weight in the scale, against a heavy balance of misery. Had I been happy, I might have squandered it like many others; — wretched, I have turned it to uses which afford me the only satisfaction I have in life. Among those are what you attribute to me as generosity and noble-mindedness, whereas they are peculiarly selfish. Let their estimate, however, be

what it may, I have never felt so much comfort in their effects, as in reflecting on the interest they have raised for me in your family, as in contemplating the change that has been wrought upon my mind by events apparently casual, which have given me such a friend as Miss Saville, whose name I am almost afraid to mention, and to whom I owe more than to any other being upon the face of the earth. She has, indeed, been a tutelary angel to me, and I feel an inexpressible desire to continue, under her auspices, the pursuit to which she gave a spring — but there are two great difficulties in my way; the appearance of hypocritical sentimentality that attends the professed study of religion, which I could surmount, as the profession is accompanied with a candid avowal that I make little or no progress; the other, and far less removable difficulty arises from my apprehension of an impropriety, involving an injury, in my attempting to be considered in any peculiar way by a lady to whom I have not, *and never can have* any other pretension than that of a

friend. Will you make it one of the first proofs of the friendship you have determined to honour me with, to give me your counsel on these points? I once took the liberty of writing a short note on the subject of my studies to your cousin. I am not sure that I was right in doing it then. I am quite sure that I should be wrong now, if I were to persist without taking your opinion, or Mr. Saville's, on the propriety of it. The reason I have preferred addressing myself to you is, that there would be a kind of formality in writing to him, which might have borne a construction not intended, and placed him in an unpleasant situation; whereas you will be able to speak your mind without any such awkward feeling; for, however I may *hope* a favourable opinion, I *expect* a candid one.

When Miss Saville, in a moment of charity and pity, set me a lesson of religion, she did not mean to have a troublesome pupil; but, if you think it proper to give her the inclosed, I hope she will not be displeased at my desire of proving how seriously I have attended to my task,

and of assuring her of my gratitude as long as I live. I take it for granted that you will consult Mr. Saville. Should I be right in my suspicion of an impropriety, have the goodness to return the inclosed in your answer. Believe me,

My dear Sir,  
Faithfully and gratefully yours,  
F. DARRELL.

## LETTER XLIX.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Miss Saville.*

(Inclosed in the foregoing Letter.)

MY reflections and feelings, since the day I spent at your cousin's, impel me to address another note to you. I have not spent such a day since I left school. I am very grateful for it — grateful to your cousins, to Mr. Saville, to Lady Mount-Vernon, to Vernon and his brother, and to you, my good and amiable tutoress; allow me to call you so, who have roused me to reflection, and put my books into my hands. I have been, perhaps, the most unhappy of men, but my feelings that day convinced me that Nature meant to do better for me than I have done for myself: — they convince me too that they who have excited them mean, now, better for me than *that self* is equal to. I unhappily thwarted Nature — I will endeavour not to thwart friendship, — yet



I cannot suddenly throw off repulsive habits, nor bring my imagination under that dominion, which is necessary to the accomplishment of their kind intention — but they will bear with me — I see that they are determined to bear with me.

*You* will perhaps have to bear with me the most, if you continue as interested on the subject of my task as you were when you did me the honour to set it. I have made very little progress in my Bible; I have made some by reflection; but even this is clouded — it has hardly opened upon me, and that since I saw you. If you recollect what passed during the few minutes I had the pleasure of conversing with you before dinner, you will find that I expressed my embarrassment on the subject of immortality. I particularly stated how little the mass of mankind were entitled to it. I am by no means entirely clear of that difficulty; but I am nevertheless at present convinced of the necessity of a state of immortality after this life; and my conviction arises from reflecting on the nature of God: — that nature must include the idea of

goodness. I find myself compelled to believe him *good*, or not to believe in him at all. But if he is good, there must be a state of future existence after this life: I am therefore convinced that there is. This being impressed upon my mind, I have read all the other arguments for it with satisfaction; — that is, my doubts are cleared away, but I am still at a loss on some points, and particularly how to dispose of the mass of mankind.

When I confess to you the progress I have made, you cannot but see the unspeakable obligation I am under to you. You cannot wonder that I am anxious to assure you of my gratitude. By pursuing the enquiries you persuaded me to enter upon, I have acquired an astonishing privilege, the use of which has given more relief to my woe-worn spirit than I ever hoped it would experience.—I mean the privilege of holding mental communication with the Deity.—Oh! it is inestimable! More than I can make you sensible of.

With all this advantage I am obliged to own, that I am still groping in the dark.

There is another character of Deity I cannot trace — LOVE. I can understand how chastening the guilty may be a proof of Love ; but when virtue itself is forsaken — when the simple-minded, single-hearted, meek, resigned, unoffending, are visited with horrors of every kind, where is the love of an Omniscient Being? Is it to be shown in another life? — Oh! but the sufferings of some in this! I could tell you such sufferings. In that case too it would be more like justice than love. Justice is a harsh attribute in some respects :— I am inclined to think it more connected with human than Divine nature. I perhaps do not express myself properly. — I cannot mean that I think justice is or ought to be out of the nature of the Deity ; — but I conceive his goodness better than I do his justice. Shakespeare expresses my meaning when he makes Hamlet say to Polonius — “ Use every man after his desert, and who shall ’scape whipping!” “ Use them *after your own honour and dignity.*” The actual state of mankind is so full of misery — where is LOVE? Yet it is an essential part of the

nature of the Deity. — Help me, help me, I beseech you, my amiable tutoress : — You have done much for me ; do more.

You will here perhaps again refer me to my books : — I must therefore candidly tell you how little way I have made. I have read the greater part of the Bible since I left Grove Park, and I have found some admirable things in it. I entered upon the perusal with a resolution to be convinced, if possible, of its being the word of God ; and as a necessary preparation I admitted, and found no great difficulty in admitting, the use of miracles in a divine dispensation. He that made nature can suspend it. The belief of a God removes that difficulty.

Another preparation I made was not to be kept back by obscurities attending the account of the creation. Time may obscure truth. Many of the objections too, which I had supported, such as the inconsistency of a curse, which was but the previous nature of the animal cursed, the serpent having being created a reptile ; such as the account of the creation being inconsistent with the facts of astro-

nomy, and other similar things, I threw aside as imputable to the imperfection of language as well as the influence of time. I opened the book to find the nature of God, the nature of man, and the nature of redemption; and I wished, sincerely wished, to find the religion it is said to contain true—that religion being, according to my conception, briefly this—that in consequence of the imperfection of created beings, and the freedom of will bestowed upon some of them by their Creator, certain orders of creatures mistook real happiness, and by opposing the will of God lost their station; that they involved man, who was created good, in their destruction, by corrupting his nature; that man, so corrupted, was lost to all hope of life and happiness; that he led a miserable, irrational existence, full of horrors, on the globe where he was first placed; and that after a few years he died and was reduced to dust; that though God foresaw those evil effects of creation and freedom of action, he did not abstain from giving existence, the good and glory of that immense act of power being cer-

tain, infinitely beyond the evil that was to ensue, and to have prevented which would have decreased, would have foiled that good and that glory that were to be the consequence of freedom of action ; — that as corruption cannot be blended with purity mankind must have been cut off from every hope of happiness, had not God in his foresight provided a remedy for this corruption, and for redeeming them from it ; and that the Christian dispensation is that remedy. This I believe to be fairly the sum and substance of the religion you think necessary to salvation. I have no hesitation in saying I wish to find this system true. It is impossible to open one's eyes, and not see that mankind are in a state of misery and corruption, and who would not wish a remedy found for it ?

My investigation so stated, I think, will give you pleasure — why must I dash away the little that I am able to give ? But it would be an ill compliment to you ; it would be a mockery of the Deity, if I were to pretend to conviction merely on a wish. That there is a God,

a state of corruption, and a remedy, is a doctrine that I am ready to receive ; I will receive it from your mouth, from that of any friend ; and I confess my blindness, or rather my perversion of mind, in having been so long a determined opposer of it : — but if there is something like it in the Bible, there is also so much to subvert it, and to destroy conviction, that it has retarded rather than advanced the progress of my studies. The Jehovah of the Jews, like the Jupiter of the heathen, is an imaginary deity made up of human passions, irascible, vindictive, unjust, partial, and any thing but the God of Love. It is not necessary to point out the passages where this description of his nature is to be found, or where he appears hardening the heart for the purpose of punishing : — he is made sufficiently to declare himself : “ I am a jealous God,” — “ I will avenge,” we meet with every-where in the Old Testament. No ; He is not to be seen, or rather, he is sadly disfigured and calumniated in it. The nature of

man, indeed, appears there, as in all other histories, bad, bad.

With respect to redemption, allowing the miracles, for I cannot think miracles ought to be a stumbling-block in the way of a man who admits a God, I confess I have met with some of the most delightful and soothing assurances and precepts that were ever given to man, and which place the giver of them far above the vindictive Jehovah of the Jews. If this letter were not already too long, I could quote to you some passages in the New Testament that have charmed me beyond every thing I ever read, far even beyond my admired Plato, whom his cotemporaries called the Divine. But in writing this I fear I am only preparing my kind tutoress for a grievous disappointment. I can imagine the creation of a man without a father or mother by the grand "Let it be" which so sublimely marks the power of God in the Old Testament. — It is a miracle. — The doctrine so far is not my difficulty, which arises, not from a miracle, but an impossibility, an incongruity, — remem-



ber I write with reverence. The sacrifice of God, to appease God, for the corruption of man, is not a miracle: it appears to me a shocking combination of words that no ideas can be affixed to. This, too, looks something like the vindictiveness of the Jehovah of the Jews, and to carry it so far as to satisfy the passion even by self-sacrifice. Nay, this vindictive spirit is absolutely declared by the chief of the Apostles, who, even in the inculcating of forgiveness, tells us to use it from a motive of revenge, for by so doing we shall heap coals of fire on the head of the person we forgive. A more horrid torture, one that not only sets the head but the heart on fire, and gives even to thought the torment of inextinguishable flames, could not have been invented by the most ingenious inquisitor. Besides this, the superlative denunciations of eternal pain of the most excruciating kind far, far exceed the retribution of human crime.

I am now giving you pain. — I will cease — I know you will forgive me when I tell you that I feel much consolation in

opening the state of my mind to one who has been of such service to me, and to consider whom as my friend is the proudest feeling of my life. I do sincerely wish I could overcome my objections to the religion delivered in the Bible as a revelation from the Almighty himself, for the truth is, that, like Agrippa, I am "almost persuaded to be a Christian." And if I could fall upon any candid mode of becoming one, I would adopt it. I have thought sometimes, that if my understanding were satisfied in part—but then it must be in the essential part—can that be?

I will conclude my letter with three questions, which are riddles to me, and I will put them as such to you. If you will solve them, or procure me a solution of them, I will deal differently with my understanding than I have done. It shall not deter me in other points—but, alas! I know it is impossible.—

Can human passions, and particularly vindictiveness, be attributed to God? and are they not so in the Bible?

Is not St. Paul's motive for forgiving

an enemy, that is, to heap coals of fire on his head, worse than an open denial of forgiveness?

Can God be a victim?

You see, my amiable tutoress, what you have brought upon yourself; but you are fully at liberty to take the assistance of Mrs. Godfrey, and also of Mr. Godfrey and Mr. Saville. I have already, through your means, recovered a portion of comfort, if not of happiness; and to be a Christian, sincerely so, that is — to believe that the sin of man has been removed, and that he has been redeemed from perdition, would, I think, add so much more comfort to my little stock, as to deserve the name of happiness. May God bless you all!

I am

Your very sincere and grateful friend,

F. DARRELL.

## LETTER L.

*Mr. Godfrey to Sir Francis Darrell.*

MY DEAR SIR FRANCIS,

NEITHER my uncle nor I had the slightest hesitation in delivering your letter to my cousin, who has given me the enclosed for you. She tells me that she has explained to you the liberty I took with your letter, which I know you will forgive in consideration of the result of it. Your letters have given us all very great pleasure. I think all your misfortune arises from too great susceptibility, but you must and shall be happy in future. We cannot be persuaded that we attribute more to you than you merit — but I will not talk to you of merit or obligation; I will only say that your friendship is a source of great pleasure to us all, and I trust it will be as lasting as life.

Will you dine with me to-morrow?  
Remember we meet the day after at Lady  
Mount-Vernon's ball.

Yours most faithfully,

GEORGE GODFREY.

## LETTER LI.

*Miss Saville to Sir Francis Darrell.*

Hanover-Square.

MY DEAR SIR,

THE peculiar circumstances of my life would render it extreme ingratitude in me, if I could fail feeling a sincere interest in your welfare; but, independent of those, I feel it an honour to have had the slightest share in drawing your attention to considerations which have been followed by comfort to you. I pray that it may be encreased in every respect, and I beg you to accept my thanks for the letter I received from you by my cousin Godfrey. Notwithstanding the pain which some parts of it could not but give, I read it with the greatest pleasure, for I saw throughout that Providence was graciously leading you to the knowledge

of those truths which cannot fail to restore you to happiness. That those are contained in the Bible I firmly believe ; but I am by no means well read in it, and I believe that it requires more learning and more acuteness of intellect to be well understood, than fall to the lot of most of those who are directed by the religion and the precepts it contains. I have no pretensions to those myself ; but that there is much comfort to be derived from the perusal of it by persons of every degree of understanding I am convinced.

You will not, I hope, think the worse of me if I own to you that I was guided into the faith I profess, and that in reading the Bible I have met with the subjects of it as things known, not as things to be studied. They seem to me to be so calculated for the advantage of mankind, that they cannot but be true ; — but the arguments, which are required by those who think it proper to examine every point minutely, are far out of my reach ; and, if it were not too bold in writing to you, I would say, I think them

unnecessary where the essential truths are so plain.

You do but justice in thinking that my father and cousins feel great interest in your welfare and happiness; and I made use of the liberty you allowed me to consult them on the subjects of your letter, which I left in the hands of my cousin Godfrey for a few days. He has taken a greater liberty with it than was permitted to me, but I beg and trust you will pardon it, in consideration of the enclosed which he has just sent to me with your letter. It is one to him from his friend the Bishop of \* \*, to whom he communicated yours; and, though *I* should probably have chosen another person to advise with, had I had your sanction, I see such goodness and wisdom in his answer to my cousin, that I cannot hesitate a moment to send it to you, with the greatest hope that you will find in it all that is wanted to give your own excellent understanding fair play; and then you will need no other aid to make you *altogether* a Christian. I will not detain you from it, but conclude,



**SIR FRANCIS DARRELL.**

with the united best wishes of your  
friends here for its proving a new cordial  
to you.

I am, my dear Sir,

Your very grateful friend,

**AUGUSTA SAVILLE.**

## LETTER LII.

*The Bishop of \* \* to Mr. Godfrey.*

MY DEAR GEORGE,

I AM rather busy at present, but I will make time to throw a few observations upon paper in compliance with your request ; — indeed, the subject demands it of me : and I am also induced by the great pleasure I felt in the perusal of Sir Francis Darrell's letter. Your excellent father was a good Christian, yet he sometimes made himself unhappy in doubting it, and would confess himself to me with as much solicitude as ever Catholic did to his confessor, in order to get my elucidation. It seems to be the nature of some men to choose difficult paths in preference to plain ones, perhaps because they are common. It is like climbing over a steep rock to get into a garden, in preference to raising the easy latch of the gate. There is no accounting for this

disposition. I believe Messrs. Gall and Spurzheim would find it out in some of the protuberances of the skull. I rather think it is owing to a faulty imagination, which disdains an easy prize. Your friend has been labouring at rocks and mountains on the outside of our garden, the summits of which are ascended by gentle and pleasant passages from the inside.

The enquirer after Christianity, who begins by asking "Can God be a victim?" has to grapple with an obstacle that he will never surmount in the position he has taken. To change the allegory: the Christian religion should be studied synthetically, not analytically; — the a, b, c, should be acquired, like that of other learning, in the early stages of life; we get the knowledge we know not how, and we examine our knowledge at leisure and to advantage as we grow up. If we stay till we are adults before we learn to read, we may learn, but with great difficulty, for we acquire habits and prejudices from those around us that impede us.

I do not wonder at your friend's embarrassment on his reading the Bible —

the wonder would have been if he had not been embarrassed. But the manner in which he prepared himself to enter upon the reading of it is highly creditable to him, and shows that he is not one of those unhappy persons who attack the tenets and history of our religion in the vanity of displaying talent and philosophical acuteness. He wishes to be a Christian; he therefore deserves to be a Christian, and I really think I may say, he is a Christian, though he will be more fully so.

There are many more difficulties in the Bible than those Sir Francis Darrell has stated, but at present I can only take notice of those. The apparent attribution of passions to the Almighty, and that vindictiveness we read of, are certainly enough to confound the acuteness of the philosopher, and to make him cry out against the dominion and existence of such a Being. In this respect men of talents take the book up to great disadvantage; they take it up, not to be satisfied with what they find, but to detect its incongruities and expose its deformities. Men of humble and common capacities,

which is the general lot, take what they comprehend, and do not trouble themselves about the rest. To these the Bible may be trusted ; it is a treasure to the poor and the meek ; it is peculiarly their treasure, and they ought not to be robbed of it. But the ingenious and the proud, and of all pride that of the understanding is the most dangerous, should never enter upon the study till they can prevail upon themselves to suspect the fallibility of their own powers, and to take assistance from others, with a determination to rely not altogether, but considerably, on the powers of those they may consult. I could tell Sir Francis that a very great man of our own times, now no more, a very successful, if not the most successful, advocate of Christianity, laid it down as a principle, that the difficulties of the Old Testament did not affect the Christian religion, but this would not be obviating his difficulty, and I fear would look like telling him to put the Old Testament on the shelf with Herodotus, which is not my intention, for in the Mosaic history lie the found-

ations of Christianity—but he will do well to study that writer.

The difficulty in this instance may be got over in the same way that the astronomical inconsistencies are reconciled, which is, that in that early state of the world the information that was necessary and proper for man was conveyed in language agreeing with his ordinary notions derived from his own senses and feelings. The vengeance of the Almighty has, in fact, as little reference to passion as the common notion of the rising and the setting of the sun to the facts of the solar system; and yet to this day the vulgar believe that the sun moves over the earth from east to west; so they believe that crime provokes anger:—the denunciations of God have that appearance; but what is the fact? The natural world is not more regulated on cause and effect, than the moral world. Freedom of action is given, but each action will have its appointed result here and hereafter—and this is the vengeance of God; this his vindictiveness. Does any man of reflection, when he reads in the se-

cond commandment, "I am a jealous God," image to himself the sensation and the marks of the passion of jealousy? What is the real sense of that passage? From the corruption which the evil spirit has introduced among you, some of you will be led to the egregious folly of worshipping false gods and idols. The consequences of denying the true God, and following the temptations of the devil, will involve you and your children in the miseries that evil produces. This denunciation, which has been one of the balls kept up by the sceptics, is evidently the effect of a cause in the general system of moral nature, in which, as well as in the physical system, the dignity of the Deity appears in acting generally by secondary causes. — I say generally, because in departing occasionally from them he peculiarly manifests his providence and his love. But yet rather than depart from them he adopts warnings and expiations. And what a proof of love was the grand, the sublime expiation of the cross! We might suppose him altering his systems both natural and

moral; and system after system, annihilating man and his corrupter, and raising a mechanical creation; but would he, even in *our* comprehension, have been exalted by such unstable acts? No; from the first he foresaw the evil of freedom, and his love provided the remedy; and your friend, as he proceeds, will find that our God is a God of love. I hope what I have said will be a satisfactory solution of his first question:—I could dwell much longer upon it, but this will give him ground; and his own understanding, and I will say happy disposition, will do the rest for him.

His second question, I think, is the result of a hasty reading. St. Paul could not propose forgiveness, as a designing mode of encreasing the gratification of revenge;—nor are the words originally his:—“The consequence of your forgiving an enemy,” says he, “is good to yourself, it is acting on the principles of your master, and you will find the comfort of it in your own breast:—as for your enemy,—if he has any feeling, it will make him sorry.” He quotes the



passage from Solomon ; — it is in the 25th chapter of his Proverbs. Sir Francis's language is very strong on this point ; and most certainly, in a feeling breast, forgiveness must create remorse ; but so much the better, for remorse leads to repentance ; and sincere repentance, since the death of Christ, washes away guilt.

The third question is not fairly put : — Christians do not say that " God is a victim," but that there is a mysterious union of so intimate a nature between God and the Spirit of Christ, that they consider themselves warranted, both from the perception of his character, and the text of the Gospel, to call him God. This is not a miracle, but a mystery, and in mysteries the understanding must give way. It is remarkable, that some of the mysteries have striking analogies, as if these were intended to assist us in our efforts to conceive them. That death should lead to life, is a mystery, but it is beautifully typified in the transformation of grubs to winged creatures after depositing their remains in a chrysalis. The union of three in one is clearly typified in man, who is com-

natures, Intellect,  
 : — and man is said  
 the image of his Maker.  
 can have but faint glimps-  
 ure of God, and it is of no  
 tance to us in this life, to  
 : than we do. I cannot, how-  
 K the difficulty of this union of  
 with God so great as to be re-  
 d, even by the understanding. In  
 nmon phraseology we should call such  
 a character *divine*, and when we Christians  
 consider the unspeakable benefits we de-  
 rive from him, I do not see that we are to  
 blame or to be ridiculed for believing him  
 when he informs us of his being so closely  
 allied to the Deity. Yet let not Sir Francis  
 disturb himself with this at present — let  
 him observe the less mysterious tenets  
 and the grand object of the Gospel, and,  
 my word for it, he will, before he has  
 done, feel that it is in a manner necessary  
 to the perfection of God's will.

Before I conclude, I will add a few  
 words on some other parts of his letter.  
 I hope I have already convinced him,  
 that God is a God of love ; — but he puts

the question in another sense, when reflecting on the miseries of life. Indiscriminate misery is the consequence of the corruption of nature, and the redemption is not from the lot into which it threw mankind in this world. We are particularly directed to consider this world as a vale of tears, wherein we may work out for ourselves a state of immortal happiness; and it is probable that earthly misery will have some good effect either in preparing for it, or enhancing the bliss. But indeed I think even the lot of men on earth is much softened, and that they enjoy a good deal of happiness. The generality of our kind are clearly undergoing the penalty of original sin; they work for their bread: they gain it by the sweat of their brow. I am old, and I have witnessed some misery, but I have also witnessed a great deal of contentment and joy, in the inferior classes of society, among whom family love and a self-approving conscience, constitute an enviable happiness. Here then are goodness and love manifested, even in this stage of probation; and as to the

exceptions, it is more probable that some concealed benefit is the cause, than that they are owing to desertion.

These observations may also serve as an answer for the state of the *mass* of men — because those I have alluded to form the mass. Sir Francis by that word meant the vile and the wicked. It must be confessed, they are but too numerous; — but even for these, hope is not extinct while they live, and after death their spirits will undergo the appointed effects of impenitence.

What those effects may be leads to the only remaining point of the letter. — I cannot enter upon it at large. The church has adopted the doctrine of an endless duration of woe, upon some texts in Scripture; — and in reason one cannot see how it is to be avoided, as the effects of expiation terminate with this life. What can wash away a crime? Repentance. — The time of repentance is gone. If it cannot be recalled — Alas! it is a sad thought. — Let not your friend dwell upon the subject — let him turn his thoughts to those delightful passages with

which he has been charmed, and in spite of all difficulties he will be a confirmed Christian.

Pray make my best compliments to him. — You should bring us acquainted. — I should esteem the friendship of such a proselyte a great honour.

I am,

Your affectionate friend,

W. . .

## LETTER LIII.

*Augusta to Angelica.*

MY DEAREST ANGELICA,

I would not detain my last letter, as I thought it would be interesting to you; but I did not then foresee how soon I should have subjects still more important to communicate to my dear sister. How fully has that foolish, wicked, anonymous note been proved unworthy of attention! Congratulate me, Angelica, on the completion of my wishes — my preserver is become a Christian. It was all I desired respecting him; it was my fervent prayer; and it has been granted. He is become a Christian; and his good sense will, I have no doubt, in time lead him to embrace the true communion.

The day after I dispatched my last, my cousin George surprised me with a letter from Sir Francis Darrell. You will

remember the note he sent me by Mr. Vernon. I little thought he continued to consider me as the prompter of his studies ; but he has paid me that compliment in a letter that affected me extremely ; and I felt at the same time that it did me great honour. The great happiness of my life, Angelica, is participating it with you — is opening my heart to you — is telling you all that occurs to me, and all that I think. I should lose half of my pleasure if you did not know — if you did not share, these grateful events of my life : I shall therefore send you a copy of the correspondence that has taken place.

Sir Francis candidly stated his difficulties and objections to some of the tenets of religion. Alas ! my dear sister, though myself convinced of their truth, I am more convinced by my heart than able to convince others by reasoning. His letter gave me a mixture of pleasure and pain : I gave it to George, who, after keeping it three days, returned it to me with a letter to himself from his friend the Bishop of \* \*, whom I once before

mentioned to you in a letter relative to the occurrences at Manor-House. You will see what a delightful letter it is: — I enclosed it in one from myself to Sir Francis. The pleasure I had in doing this was great: imagine then, Angelica, what it was, what it is, when I tell you that the impression it made upon him was similar to that it made upon me. I cannot express to you how happy this has made me — but you will imagine it from knowing the interest I take in this extraordinary man, to whom I am so much indebted.

George sent the letters to him yesterday, and invited him to dine with us to-day. — He accepted the invitation. My cousin, knowing that he would prefer a family party, asked no one else except his friend, Mr. Vernon, who unfortunately happened to be engaged to dinner, but promised to join us in the evening. How will you be surprised, Angelica, to hear that Caroline and I passed almost the whole day alone with Sir Francis Darrell! To make you understand this, I must tell you that there are frequently



debates of such importance in the House of Commons, that the members cannot leave it till a very late hour, sometimes not till the next morning. I believe you know that my cousin is a Member. My father, though none, takes great interest in the debates, and generally accompanies George to the House. To-day the debate proved to be one that required attendance. Sir Francis came at the usual time, and had sat nearly an hour with us, when Caroline received a note, begging that she would apologize to him, and go to dinner. Imagine my situation, Angelica, after what had passed between Caroline and me the other day, after our conversation on the vile anonymous note : — but in spite of my thoughts I preserved my presence of mind; and, his conversation and manner convincing me that he was completely ignorant of the circumstances about which consciousness gave me an awkward feeling, I recovered my ease, and spent one of the most agreeable days of my life.

Caroline had not only expressed her wish that morning of our conversation,

but she had gone so far as to say, that she thought I had made an impression of a peculiar kind on his heart. Recollecting this, I naturally endeavoured to discover on what grounds she entertained that opinion, and I declare to you I could find none. He was as attentive to her as to me ; nay, I thought much more so, and it made me easy and happy on that score. It would indeed be a source of sorrow to me to think that he should form so fruitless an attachment. I believe my conviction of Caroline's error helped to make me pass the day the more pleasantly. He mentioned the receipt of the letters before dinner, but without dwelling on the subject. He said to Caroline :

“Can you help me to words to express my thanks to your excellent husband, and to this task-setting cousin of yours, for the service they have rendered me? No ; no language affords them, and I must be content to depend upon their imagination for credit to feelings of the most grateful nature. My difficulties are solved, and your good Bishop shall have

a share of my prayers — but we will not talk upon it now.”

This was all that passed on that subject. He started others of a pleasant nature throughout the day — several respecting Italy ; and we talked of you.

After dinner I sang for him ; and when I was in the middle of a song, Caroline — I thought it unkind — left the room. Her motive was clear to me, and I own, after what had passed, I felt unpleasantly at the moment. — However, I am now glad of it, for nothing could have so clearly proved her mistake as his behaviour while she was absent. Had I made that impression upon him that she supposed, and still supposes, would he not have taken the opportunity to avow it, or to show it in some way ? On the contrary, his attention seemed to cease, and he was far more engaged with one of the music-books than in noticing me. It is true, he talked to me, but it was about the composers whose names he met with, their different style, and the music before him, from which he scarcely ever

raised his eyes till Caroline returned. He resumed his attentions to her, and not a word or a look passed the whole day that confirmed her opinion.

In the evening Mr. Vernon came in, but nothing particular occurred, though I could not help remarking some looks which Sir Francis gave him several times while he was playing the guitar, and singing a song which he had himself written for Caroline. I cannot call them frowns, but they brought his *Paris brows* to my mind. Once, while I was at the piano, and Caroline close to me, they were at a little distance, and I observed him speaking in a low voice, but with an energy of action which, though he endeavoured to suppress it, betokened something that caused in him more than a common feeling. It was evidently not the music. — Why should I at the moment suspect I might have been the subject? I am not liable to such suspicions; but, certainly, it was not so, as you will find. Some company came in, and Sir Francis soon after went away, promising Caroline to be at Lady Mount-Vernon's to-morrow

night. Mr. Vernon remained, and even outstaid the company. I thought by his manner he had something particular to say to Caroline, to whom he had occasionally spoken in a low voice during the evening. I took a moment to whisper my idea to her, and an intention to leave the room, as I believed he had some communication to make. She pointedly forbade me to quit her — and we spent full half an hour with him alone before he went away. I have told you that Mr. Vernon is an agreeable man — I do not remember ever to have wished him away before, but he did not appear to me the same person. He suffered the conversation to flag, looked serious, and for minutes gazed thoughtfully at the fire. — He recovered himself, however, and took his leave gaily.

The House of Commons was still sitting, and we received a message from George, that it would probably be late in the morning before it broke up, upon which Caroline proposed going to bed. We had, however, a short conversation,

that I think will interest you ; and as I am not sleepy I will add it here.

“ Well ! Augusta,” cried Caroline, as we drew to the fire, “ what think you of our day ? ”

“ It has altogether,” said I, “ been a very pleasant one, and rendered doubly so by the happy impression which has been made on the mind of Sir Francis Darrell.”

“ And do you continue,” said she, smiling, “ to think that there is no other happy impression made upon him ? ”

“ You mean by me, Caroline, and I am more and more convinced there is not.”

“ And why,” replied she, continuing her smile, “ are you more and more convinced ? ”

I here made the observations that I have already stated to you, and concluded by saying —

“ Not only this, but his letter, his whole conduct, prove that the full extent of his attachment to me is a friendship which has been brought on by peculiar

ations, that the proofs are on the side of my opinion, — and I hope they are.”

“ You shall not hope so.”

“ I must, I must.”

“ I neither persuade you to be in love, my dear girl, nor, if you were, to own it hastily, even to yourself; but I would have you consider the subject in the light in which I place it to you, — that Sir Francis Darrell is in love, and reason with yourself upon it as if it were the fact, and endeavour to prepare yourself not to counteract the good that would result from a —”

“ My dear Caroline!” exclaimed I, before she finished her sentence.

“ Well!” said she, “ I won’t vex you by repeating the impossible word. I will only add, that I have now more reason than when we first conversed on the subject to know that it would not be *very* disagreeable to my uncle.”

“ And you have been talking to my father, Caroline? and my father to you, and not to me?”

“ He will talk with you — he meant it this day, but circumstances have pre-

vented him, and I could not postpone this conversation after the day we have spent ; and, to use you with all the openness with which I wish you to use me, it has not been so spent without some little premeditation ; for though George could not leave the house, my uncle could, and, in strictness, ought to have joined us at dinner."

" Gracious Heaven ! Caroline, are you all then united in a plan against me ?"

" Quite the reverse. You are the sole directress in all that concerns you. Nor have my thoughts been kept from you a moment."

" If it is my father's wish, I am, indeed, unfortunate ; for he wishes what, I am conscious, ought not to be."

" He certainly wishes it, Augusta ; but it will not break his heart if it should never take place."

" It must not take place, Caroline."

" We will leave it then to Providence ; and now I am going to mention another subject which will show you how fully open my heart is to you. I am going to talk to you about my own feelings.



You see with what affection I love your cousin. What is your opinion? Should a woman ever keep a secret from her husband?"

"Surely not, Caroline."

"If the knowledge of that secret will make him unhappy?"

"I should think hardly any unhappiness can be equal to that which would arise from the suspension of confidence."

"I think so too; but it is a most painful circumstance I have to communicate to him. It will give *you* a great deal of pain."

"Good Heavens! what can you mean?"

"I will tell you; and you shall say, whether I had not better defer mentioning it to George for the present; for, after all, my suspicion may have magnified the fact. Mr. Vernon —"

The moment she mentioned his name, her secret flashed upon me. I had noticed his particular attentions in the country, and his whole behaviour this evening convinced me, that he had offered an insult to Caroline. I now perceived

the object of Sir Francis Darrell's frowns, and of the warmth with which he spoke apart to Mr. Vernon; that it was Caroline, and not I, who engaged his thoughts at that time; and that his emotion was anger.

"Mr. Vernon," continued she, "has been a friend from infancy: he went abroad early, but renewed, I ought to say increased, his intimacy with George as soon as he returned from the army. George is extremely attached to him. He is, as you know, an agreeable man, clever, and I really believe, in the main, good; but I fear that he has imbibed maxims among free-thinking companions, which have given an injurious latitude to his principles. In religion he is more careless than impious, and, though he does not openly say it, he shows that he piques himself upon the favours of women. I am confident, Augusta, that our sex is in general virtuous; but the power of flattery and gaiety over weak minds lead too many to imprudencies and to vice. Mr. Vernon, I fear, has seen something in me which induces him

ity for it, that I must believe it, whether I will or not. It seems an undoubted fact, Angelica, that I am in love—in love with Sir Francis Darrell, and don't know it. George insinuates it, Caroline discerns it, and lastly, my father knows it. I have just had a very affectionate conversation with the last, for which I was prepared by what I heard last night from Caroline.

“ Well, GUSTA,” said he, “ I am going to talk to you upon that old, stale, good-for-nothing topic, Love.”

“ Oh! my dear father,” said I, “ I know what you are going to say; and I would rather hear you talk upon any other subject, for I know nothing of love.”

“ If that's the case, Gusta! talking of it will give you no pain, and, therefore, why should it not be as indifferent as any other topic?”

“ Well! my dear father, it is your pleasure, and I will listen to you.”

“ My dear Augusta,” replied he, “ you know that all authority is out of the question with me; you know that affection

is the only spring of your conduct towards me that I wish. I shall not begin now to talk of duty for a motive, after so many years actuated by love. I know you do not think of marriage;—to plunge headlong into it is a folly, of which you are incapable; but, without hastiness, it is far from being unbecoming of you to take the thought of it into consideration. Nothing is wanting to complete my happiness, but seeing you united to a man worthy of you:—and he must be no common man whom I shall think so. Caroline, I find, has opened to you the state of my mind on the subject, and I must say that, if I had the whole kingdom to choose out of, I should name Sir Francis Darrell.”

In spite of my being prepared as I was, when the name came from my father’s lips my blood ran into my face. He looked seriously, but affectionately, at me.

“ Instead of recommending the passion of love to you, my dear Augusta, I warn you against it. I know your strength of mind, but I know also that love often

insinuates itself unconsciously ; and, should there be any occasion to combat him, it requires some hard fighting to gain a victory."

" Surely, my dear father, you do not think you have occasion to give this advice to me."

" I do not think the worse of you," replied he, " when I say I think I have. I am sure in your situation I should love Darrell ; all I wish you to do is, to manage so well, that there shall be no unhappiness in any case ; but, which I imagine very possible, that there shall be a great deal of happiness on all sides. You know I always speak openly to you, Augusta, and it is on this occasion more incumbent upon me to do so than on any which has occurred in your life. If I have any judgment in these matters, — that young man's heart is yours ; on the other hand, though I will not say your heart is his, I may at least say, that I think it would be, if there were not some impediments, unnecessary impediments, in the way. I love, I esteem, I admire this young man. I trust you will not

allow the difference in your modes of religious faith to foil such happiness as may be produced by an union with him — I hope you love me too well. But this is not the only impediment; — there is a something, a smothered fire of some kind at his heart, which should be altogether extinguished. It is in the way between you. Now, my child, I think it is in your power, and yours only, to extinguish it. I think you owe it to him; and, if it is really as I suspect, that he is in love with you, I know not any thing that would give me so much pleasure as your accepting him. But when I say this, God forbid you should be swayed by it against your inclination; that would end in misery. One thing more; though I am confident he loves you, I am not equally sure that he will ever propose himself to you: there may be something at his heart that may prevent it; therefore watch your own, and keep it so much your own, that it may be at your disposal. Lovers you will have a choice of, though, in my opinion, none in any respect like Darrell. His natural

disposition, however clouded for a time, his acquirements, his understanding, his desire for truth, his generosity, his manners, all mark him as one of the first of men, and when this secret fever is got over, and got over it will be, I hope he will be one of the happiest. Think of what I have said, Augusta, and act according to your judgment."

I was quite overpowered with my father's kindness, and had scarcely courage enough to say, that I was very sure my heart was at my own disposal, but that I did not think him right in respect to Sir Francis's, and that, even if it was, the causes which would arise against his wish would, on both sides, be insurmountable. "No, no," said he, "weigh what I have said, and I am sure all will go well." He embraced me, and left me.

Well! my dear Angelica! What say you? Do you believe it? Is your Augusta in love? Let your opinion be what it may, I beg you to be assured that I do not, and cannot, think of a union with any man with whom it will be

my duty to differ in opinion : — again I say it must not be. But my situation is critical : he has gained the hearts of my father and cousins, and I have no one to help me in the contest. Pray come to me : pray to my dear Marchese and Marchesa to send you to preserve your Augusta.

I must now think about the ball. — When last I wrote to you I thought of much pleasure in it : — now I look forward to the evening with dread. How am I to summon courage and calmness for the night, with the consciousness of what has passed in conversation with Caroline, and also with my father? I will do my best — oh that you were with me!

AUGUSTA.



LETTER LIV.

*Augusta to Angelica.*

(In Continuation.)

How time flies! The ball is over; another day is past; a thousand things have happened; and I am again at my table writing to my dear Angelica. It will not be easy to throw into method what I have to say, but I will try. I confess I shall write with pain, for I cannot divest myself of those feelings which I have never scrupled to own towards Sir Francis Darrell; and they could not have been more wrung, even had the suspicions entertained of my heart by my father and cousins been true. Whatever grounds I may unconsciously have given for those suspicions respecting me, I wonder how they could possibly imagine him attached beyond the common friendship he . . . I have very strong proofs,

Angelica, to give you, that there is no foundation for such a surmise — and you will see that I have good reason to suppose that, however slanderous that vile anonymous note was as to me, there was some truth as to an engagement of the heart; — but I am anticipating — my intention was to give you an account of the night in order, and to let you know all my feelings, the agreeable ones, as well as the painful, and I will still endeavour to do it.

We were early in the room, yet Sir Francis was there before us. He was in conversation with Lady Mount-Vernon when we went in. It appears that she had, by Mr. Vernon, requested his early attendance; and, when I learned the reason of it, it encreased the admiration and affection which she already possessed in my mind. Delightful woman! She does all she undertakes so completely and with such grace that she doubly charms. After what she had heard respecting Sir Francis from his friend, and what she had herself witnessed, she resolved that her reception of him should be marked

with every honour she could bestow upon him — and she had engaged him to come thus early that she might appoint him to open the ball with her. She had settled the weighty business, she said, but not without much difficulty, as he protested he was no dancer.

“Miss Saville,” said she, “I engage you for him for the next two dances. Sir Francis, permit me to present you to your partner for the next two dances.”

He bowed, saying to me: “Really it is long since I danced — and I certainly did not mean to be showing my blundering steps to-night: my partner will have to tutor me in this also, if she consent to be troubled with me.”

I answered that I did not think he would want tutoring. I felt as if the eyes of every one were upon me: — mine met Caroline’s, but she was too kind to distress me by her looks, yet the recollection of our conversation shook my nerves a little.

As the company came in, I heard the name of Darrell echoing from mouth to mouth, and observed much surprise shown

at the sight of him. He was introduced to some of Lady Mount-Vernon's friends: groups literally collected about him, and great was the astonishment of all when she called upon him to lead down the first dance. It was now my turn to be pointed out. — Mr. Vernon had engaged me; and, as I went to my place, my ears were assailed with “that's she, that's she! Where? where? There, there! Yes! in France! Sir Francis Darrell! They are both here!” Imagine my feelings, my dear Angelica, as well as you can, for I cannot pretend to describe them to you: there certainly was a great confusion in my head, and my heart was not sufficiently light to enjoy the dance. Some of the company I knew before, but these were but a small portion of the number. Mr. Vernon, who was all life and spirits, introduced me to my neighbours in the dance, and pointed out other characters in the room. — By his assiduity, he called off my attention from myself; and, when the first dance finished, I felt sufficiently at ease to take some pleasure in going down the second. At the conclusion I

SIR FRANCIS DARRELL.

... hastening to join Caroline, without attending to the company about me, when I heard myself addressed by a female voice —

“ I am glad to see Miss Saville so well.”

I looked and found that, in endeavouring to open a passage through the lookers-on, I was passing Lady Betty Bramble-bear. — I was not a little discomposed at the sight of her. I returned her notice by hoping she was well.

“ I have been admiring your dancing these ten minutes,” said she : — “ give me leave to introduce Miss Craven to you ; she is a neighbour of yours in Northamptonshire, and is at present staying with me in town.”

“ I interchanged court’sies with the lady.

“ I see Mrs. Godfrey,” said Lady Betty, “ dancing with Lord Mount-Vernon : — she has not got the best partner in the room.”

“ He rides better than he dances, my dear, but never mind that,” cried Lady

Bab, who, unobserved, was standing at her shoulder.

"Hah! Lady Barbara, how do you do? I have not seen you for an age."

"No," replied Lady Bab, "not since I was at Bramblebear-Hall."

"I hope," said Lady Betty, "you enjoyed the season in Herefordshire, and had no falls?"

"Thank you, my dear, the same to you," retorted the huntress, "I have never had a fall, and I wish you never may."

"May what?"

"Ask Miss Saville," said she, laughing and hastening off.

"What can Lady Barbara mean?" said Lady Betty: "How do you do, Mr. Vernon?"

"What!" said he, "have you been piquing my cousin upon her riding?"

"Not I," cried she. "So I see Darrell is here: — wonders will never cease; — and to lead off too: — I was not in the room, but every body is talking of it: — do you know whom he dances with next?"

SIR FRANCIS DARRELL.

Perhaps he is not engaged — go and bring him to me.”

“He is engaged,” replied Mr. Vernon, “but I will obey your Ladyship. Will you allow us to pass? we are going to join Mrs. Godfrey.”

“By all means,” said she, staring at me, as she made way.

Sir Francis was at the head of the room with his partner, and, on seeing me approach, stepped forward to claim me.

“I can promise you,” said Lady Mount-Vernon, “that he will not put you out.”

He now paid me a pleasing but not a particular attention, not nearly so much so as Mr. Vernon did. — He dances with remarkable ease, but with more grace than vivacity, as if he felt a consciousness that he had no right to be dancing. Indeed he once said so.

“Oh! Miss Saville,” said he, “I have no right to the spirits requisite to dancing.”

Though not particular, he made himself agreeable, indeed more so than if he had been particular, and I should have spent a

happy half-hour, had I not observed the company on both sides looking at us, and whispering in crowds, as they followed us through the dance. Some of their whispers reached my ear, and of course must have reached Sir Francis's.

“ Her first winter.” —

“ Brought up in Italy.”

“ Godfrey's cousin.”

“ Found her in a wood.”

“ Oh! that's she who was found in a wood.”

“ Where does *he* keep himself?”

“ Odd stories.”

You will believe, Angelica, that the pleasure I should have taken in the dance was completely destroyed; and that I would have gladly resigned my partner to any other lady in the room, to have escaped the painful notice which my dancing with him produced.

Among others who crowded after us I perceived Lord Mariton, on whose countenance there was a malicious smile. —

He had not recognized me at all: — when we got to the bottom of the dance, he came up and asked me for the next



two. At the conclusion of my dance, with Mr. Vernon, I had entered into several engagements:— I told him this— on which he asked if he might hope to be placed on my list:— I said the last gentleman to whom I was engaged, was Mr. Aspell, and I should afterwards hold myself engaged to him. He continued talking and standing between Sir Francis and me, upon which the latter said,

“ My Lord, I am still Miss Saville’s partner.”

The other with a frown, said, “ Well! what then, Sir ?”

“ Only, I’ll thank you to stand from between us,” said Sir Francis, and with his arm he gently put him aside. He resumed his ground — Sir Francis looked seriously but calmly at him, and desisted.

We were very soon after engaged in going up the dance. — “ I hope,” said he, “ you place my submission to its proper account.”

“ I do, indeed,” replied I, “ and I thank you.”

“ I should never forgive myself,” said he, “ were I to occasion your name to be

implicated in a foolish quarrel, and I know you approve forbearance, which is indeed sometimes a very difficult virtue to practise."

How amiable is this! and what a pity is it that a man who thinks so well, and possesses such powers of mind, should suffer himself to be the dupe of any woman! I say the dupe, for I cannot believe that he is playing the hypocrite with us all, even if wicked enough to intend practising upon my heart, as said in the anonymous note. He is no hypocrite, but he appears unaccountably shackled by the arts of one, of the nature of whose attachment to him it is impossible to doubt. It gives me a pang, but, in spite of the opinion of my family, it is such a pang as I should feel were I his sister.

Having led me to my seat, he left me with Caroline, and I missed him for some time. At first I thought he avoided Lady Betty, but I afterwards perceived him in close conversation with her, at a distance, in another room. Oh! how painful the sight was to me! It was when I took my place for a

dance — I stood directly opposite the arch between the rooms. Before I advanced high enough in the dance to lose sight of them, he left her and came towards the ball-room, but I did not observe to what point he went. In dancing down, as I approached the bottom, I again saw him, and also her : — she was laughing, and I saw her strike him very familiarly with her fan. They were at a short distance from the dance ; his back was towards me. There stood near them an extraordinary looking creature, a young man, who every now and then seemed to jerk the tip of a sharp nose downwards towards his mouth, accompanied with a wink of his left eye, and an arch grin. He was evidently making his grimaces to another person, as indications of what was passing in his mind about Sir Francis and Lady Betty, the latter of whom caught a sight of me, and I imagined redoubled her familiarities in consequence. She laughed, she flirted her handkerchief in his face — called him familiarly Darrell ; and said, “ you *shall* dance.” The odd man seemed un-

able to contain himself, and, having winked again and again at his friend, turned his face directly towards me, and winked his eye at *me*. I was shocked, and, I believe, blushed extremely. Lady Betty, perceiving that Sir Francis was turning, nodded her head at me, and cried, "mayn't he, Miss Saville?" She took his arm at the same time, as if to bring him forward — but, without looking, probably, or hearing my name, he disappeared — and so did she, some of the company coming between us; and when they passed they were both gone. I would have given the world to have been at home.

"How do you, Miss?" said the winking man to me.

"I have not the pleasure of knowing you."

"I know you, though," said he; "I saw you at Peterborough, at the Cathedral, and often in your barouche, and this very night, since you came to the ball, Betsy was introduced to you. I am very often at Bramblebear-hall — Betsy is staying with Lady Betty Bramblebear;

she is my sister ; her name is Craven, and so is mine."

Here I was turned by the dancer of the next couple, and could only bow my acknowledgment of acquaintance to Mr. Craven. He was, however, immediately at my elbow again.

"Did you observe those two?" said he, winking his eye, "too bad! was'nt it?"

I knew not how to treat him, but was fortunately relieved by my partner, who, not brooking the intrusion, called,

"Order."

"By all means," cried Mr. Craven, and desisted from his pursuit.

"It was but too clear, Angelica, that the anonymous note was not false in every particular ; and, in spite of the delight I had lately experienced in the company and correspondence of Sir Francis Darnell, I was convinced that perfection was not to be expected in human nature. I had suffered myself to be persuaded by his friend and my own mind, that there existed no attachment between him and Lady Betty — but am I perpetually to

deny the evidence of my senses and believe only according to my wishes? And this is not all — but I will proceed regularly. — I made every effort not to excite any notice of my appearance, and particularly as it might be attributed to the departure of Sir Francis, who had gone away before the dance I allude to was finished. He commissioned Mr. Vernon to make his apology to Lady Mount-Vernon for going away so early.

I ought to give you a description of the rooms and dresses of the night, but you can imagine all this from others which have been described to you, and you know that the hostess has great taste. The company formed an elegant assembly of gay, lively, handsome, and sensible people of distinction. Some few of the ladies, I was sorry to see, appeared as if they did not estimate modesty among the virtues of women. It is said that all these mistaken persons cannot be shut out from society; but, in truth, I do not see why. They cannot blush themselves, and are they to make others blush for them?

The evening seemed to pass most agreeably with all the company. — As for me, I confess I wished myself at home before it was half over. With the supper and the dancing after supper, it was between four and five o'clock before we broke up — Lady Mount-Vernon would keep us to the very last. Here, Angelica, comes the most painful occurrence of the evening. On my shawl's being presented to me by Mr. Vernon, I found a note pinned to it, without any address: — it was in pencil and contained these words: "If you are not convinced now, take your fate." I immediately gave it to Caroline, who stood by me. She thought it most prudent to say nothing and slipped it into her glove. It was read by our party before we went to bed, and we agreed that there could be no doubt now of its being the artifice of Lady Betty Bramblebear, inspired by a spirit of jealousy. George thought it might be fully detected by enquiring at Lord Mount-Vernon's, to know who had been meddling with the shawls, but we concluded that it was not

worth the while. I could not help expressing my doubt of Sir Francis's weakness from what I had myself observed. Neither my father, nor George, nor Caroline would hear of it. They declared that it was some farther artifice of the same lady. George said he had observed her conduct, and Sir Francis's also : — it was folly on her side, and suffering on his ; and his early departure was a proof of it. I can only hope, my dearest Angelica, that it may prove so, but what I saw is so impressed on my mind ; and that Mr. Craven's wink, with his " Did you observe them ? too bad ! " perpetually haunts me.

I will not conclude without saying that Mr. Vernon has since behaved himself so well, and so much to Caroline's satisfaction, that I hope those weak indications of an improper attachment were the result of a momentary folly, and that they will never appear again. I shall now dispatch my packet, though I am expecting one from you daily. I hope soon to hear that your coming to me is fixed. — I trust by your next to hear that.



Mr. Dartford is at Florence : — his mother is in town, but was not at the ball. Alas ! my father has had another letter from Count Olivastro : — he is coming to England — Adieu ! my dearest Angelica. Ever love

Your most affectionate sister,

AUGUSTA.

END OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

## POPULAR NOVELS

PUBLISHED BY

LONGMAN, HURST, REES, ORME, AND BROWN,

PATERNOSTER-ROW.

---

THE MISCELLANEOUS WORKS and NOVELS of R. C. DALLAS, Esq. In 7 Vols. 12mo. Price 2l. 2s. Boards.

TALES OF THE HEART. By Mrs. OPIE. In 4 Vols. 12mo. Price 1l. 8s. Boards.

TALES OF THE PRIORY. By Mrs. HOLLAND. In 4 Vols. 12mo. Price 1l. 4s. Boards.

TALES OF IMAGINATION, by the Author of the Bachelor and Married Man. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Boards.

THE MONASTERY. A Romance. By the Author of Waverley. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 1l. 4s. Boards.

DOMESTIC SCENES. A Novel. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 1l. 1s. Boards.

EVELEEN MOUNTJOY; or VIEWS of LIFE. By Mrs. ROBERT MOORE. In 4 Vols. 12mo. Price 1l. 4s. Boards.

LEOLIN ABBEY. A Novel. By Miss LEFANG, Author of Strathallan. In 3 Vols. 12mo. 1l. 1s. Boards.

DECISION. A Tale. By the Author of Correction. In 3 Vols. 12mo. 1l. 1s. Boards.

*Popular Novels published by Longman & Co.*

**DUDLEY.** A Novel. By Miss O'KEEFE, Author of Patriarchal Times, Zenobia, &c. 3 Vols. 1l. 1s. Boards.

**THE CONFESSIONS OF J. J. ROUSSEAU,** Citizen of Geneva. In Two Parts. To which are added, the Reveries of a Solitary Walker. Translated from the French. A new Edition. In 4 Vols. 12mo. Price 1l. 1s. Boards.

**THE FAST OF ST. MAGDALEN.** A Romance. By Miss ANNA MARIA PORTER. The 2d Edition. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 1l. 1s. Boards.

**THE VETERAN; or, MATRIMONIAL FELICITIES.** 3 Vols. 12mo. 1l. 1s. Boards.

**A TRAVELLER'S TALE OF THE LAST CENTURY.** By Miss SPENCE, Author of Letters from the Highlands, &c. In 3 Vols. 16s. 6d. Boards.

**NEW TALES,** by Mrs. OPIE. 3d Edition. In 4 Vols. 12mo. Price 1l. 8s. Boards.

Contents:—Mrs. Arlington; or, All is not Gold that glitters—Proposals of Marriage—White Lies—Henry Woodville—The Young Man of the World—A Tale of Trials—An Odd Tempered Man—The Ruffian Boy; a Tale founded on Fact—The Welcome Home; or, the Ball.

**HESITATION; or, TO MARRY OR NOT TO MARRY.** By the Author of the Bachelor and the Married Man. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 18s. Boards.

**ERNESTUS BERCHTOLD; or, THE MODERN ŒDIPUS.** A Tale. By J. POLIDORI, M. D. Author of the "Vampyre." 12mo. Price 6s. Boards.

**CORALY.** A Novel. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 13s. 6d. Boards.

**SIR FRANCIS DARRELL.**

**VOL. IV.**

---

Printed by A. and R. Spottiswoode,  
Printers-Street, London.

# SIR FRANCIS DARRELL;

OR

## *THE VORTEX:*

*A Novel.*

---

By R. C. DALLAS, Esq.

AUTHOR OF PERCIVAL, AUBREY, MORLAND,  
&c. &c.

---

E i rimorsi, e il pentire, e il pianger, nulla  
Fia che mi vaglia? ALFIERI.

The gathering number, as it moves along,  
Involves a vast involuntary throng;  
Who, gently drawn, and struggling less and less,  
Roll in her vortex, and her power confess.  
POPE.

---

*IN FOUR VOLUMES.*

VOL. IV.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR LONGMAN, HURST, REES, ORME, AND BROWN,  
PATERNOSTER-ROW.

1820.



# SIR FRANCIS DARRELL;

OR

## *THE VORTEX.*

---

### LETTER LV.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Lord Mariton.*

MY LORD,

RATHER than give occasion to altercation and disturbance at Lord Mount-Vernon's last night, I put your card in my pocket: I here return it, and shall take no farther notice of it. You will now act as you think proper.

I am your humble servant,

F. DARRELL.

May-Fair, Friday.

VOL. IV.

B



## LETTER LVI.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Mr. Vernon.*

MY DEAR VERNON,

I SUPPOSE you will be in bed all day. — I have been in bed all night, and am up, and have breakfasted upwards of an hour. You will receive this on opening your eyes, for I have desired Morris to tell your man to give it to you as soon as you ring your bell. I shall be at home all day, and beg you will come to me. What an hour of, I think I may say, bliss did I enjoy at your brother's last night! Your sister is an angel. — For the last seven or eight years of my life, my existence gives me some idea of a hell; and, if it is not profane, I would say that the first hour at Lady Mount-Vernon's last

night was comparatively a heaven to me. Her sweet manners, her kindness, her motives, went to my heart. — And then the way in which she put me into the hands of the angel whom you have dared to call my Augusta ; who little thought, who little thinks, how completely she absorbed my attention — my whole soul. I outwardly was but commonly attentive to her, though, till I finished the dances with her, I was in mind alive to nothing else. I knew, however, that the eyes of the whole room would be upon us ; and I re-resolved at the conclusion of those to cease my attentions.

From that moment I seemed to be pursued by a demon in the form of Bramblebear's wife : — I could not escape from her : — she met me at every turn : — I was obliged to go from the house to avoid her. She knows I have no heart for her : — she says she knows it — nay, that if I had my own free I never would wretchedly compound it with that of a married woman. I must fall upon a plan to prevent this persecu-

tion:— I fear that Miss Saville saw something of it last night, and perhaps imputed the folly to me. Heaven forbid! By-the-bye, Lady Betty was not, by some score, the only one of the Vortex at your brother's last night. How the foolish pretty things swam about! You may say what you will of the pleasant gentleness of the whirl, and of its being no Charybdis; but it is evident to me that it ends in perdition. — A few intoxicated rounds of pleasure, and down they go. — Lady Betty is gone. — I do not think she will ever be seen again at Lady Mount-Vernon's; and the other twenty will drop off one by one. What an immense difference between such ephemeral butterflies and spirits, and beauties like Lady Mount-Vernon's, Mrs. Godfrey's, Miss Saville's! Oh! where have I been all my life! Quit it, Vernon, quit the Vortex entirely, before the current is so strong as to admit of no escape — and beware, beware, I beseech you, of the rock I pointed out to you the other night — perhaps a little too warmly — but you will

•

forgive it, and ascribe it to the sincere affection I feel for you.

Come to me immediately. — I have got into a scrape with Lord Mariton : I am glad it was not last year, for I fear I should have had no scruple in cutting his throat. Fortunately for him, and for me too, I have come a little to my senses, and I will have no duel. — It is equally foolish and criminal. He was rude last night, but it was not my intention to notice his rudeness. Whether he imputed my indifference to a deficiency of courage, or was instigated by disappointment, he took it into his head to come by my side and, after eyeing me, to say if I did not like his standing between *the young lady* and me, I might have his card. — It was in his hand, and he held it up. I looked at him, and took it without making a syllable of reply. The worst of not fighting a duel is, that it encourages fops and bullies to talk big ; — but this is no reason, and there can be *no* reason which should induce

one man to kill another, but self-defence. I want to talk to you on the subject, and I shall expect you this afternoon.

Ever yours,

F. DARRELL.

## LETTER LVII.

*Mr. Vernon to Mr. Godfrey.*

Speenham-Land, Saturday.

MY DEAR GODFREY,

I was three times in your house to-day before I left town, without being able to catch any of you at home; and I am thus far on my way with Aspell to Bath, where he and I have an engagement for a week or ten days. I am vexed that I was compelled to set out without seeing some of you, to tell you the facts which took place this morning at Arthur's, and which I have no doubt will take a hundred different forms before they reach you, for Darrell will not tell them. We sleep here to-night, and I will make use of our halt to give you the account.

Yesterday before I was out of bed,

I received a note from Darrell, requesting me to come to him. I did not get up till very late ; and it was dinner time before I saw him. I know his appearance on Thursday night at Mount-Vernon's created a general surprise ; and a thousand enquiries were made and causes ascribed respecting the phenomenon, which had been rendered the more extraordinary by his opening the ball with my sister. Miss Saville's being in the same room and dancing with him roused the recollections of the events in France last year : — and then the familiar manner of Lady Betty, which absolutely drove him out of the house, altogether made him the incessant object of observation and talk, but in general with a pleasing kind of interest. There were, however, a few of our young men who did not well relish his reception, and among those was Lord Mariton. I observed him, smarting under the disappointment he had met with, with a countenance on which I perused jealousy and envy, eyeing Darrell ; and I was more than once afraid his passions

would get the better of his prudence ; — and it seems in fact that they did, though I knew nothing of it till I heard from Darrell yesterday. I went to May-Fair the moment I was dressed.

“ Well,” said he, “ what think you of Mariton’s giving me his card ? ”

“ That he is a fool : — how did you offend him ? ”

“ I cannot conceive how, except it was by peaceably bearing some rudeness he treated me with, in standing between my partner and me. I quitted the field, and was extremely surprised when he came up to me, and said, that if I was not satisfied, I should have his card, which he held up at the same time.”

“ This is very provoking. — What have you done ? or what do you mean to do ? ”

“ I have this morning sent him back his card in a cover containing two lines, telling him that I did not mean to notice it.”

“ I wish you had allowed me to take it to him : I would have prevented any farther folly.”



“ No, that would have given him an idea that I was begging my life ; — and, though I have resolved to fight no duel, I do not intend to leave him to imagine that I act through fear.”

“ What’s to be done to prevent his talking ?”

“ There, there lies the secret of duelling. — Cowardice is thought to be the sign of a base nature ; and a generous spirit, rather than incur the imputation of it, will die, and die in the act of a crime. In this sense it seems a pardonable weakness, perhaps a noble one, if weakness can be noble. It arises from the desire of being thought well of, an undoubted good motive, if well understood — if the good opinion desired be that of the virtuous and sensible. But I believe that all duels are fought either to gratify passion, or to preserve the opinion of that portion of the world which is considered as the fashionable part of society. In short, a man must cease to be a man of fashion if he refuses to fight a duel. That there are good and sensible men in fashionable society, I

shall not, with my present feelings, take upon me to deny ; but they who deserve that character must condemn duelling on principle, however they tolerate it on a supposed necessity. The custom is not kept up on their opinion : — it owes its duration to the testy, the self-sufficient, the jealous, beings with which the Vortex swarms : — and must every man be at the call of those wasps, to kill, or be killed ?”

I agreed with Darrell, yet I am so tinctured with the fashionable doctrine of a mode of preserving good manners in society, that I owned I did not think it could in all cases be avoided.

“With respect to society,” said he ; “I have not had much satisfaction in what I have experienced in it : it would be no privation to me to give it up entirely. With my present mind, I have no doubt that I may find some of the most valuable characters in life to associate with ; and what care I for the Vortex ?”

I must here inform you that this is a cant word between him and me, to designate the thoughtless and the profi-

gate, forming that part of the fashionable world, who, having no fixed ideas of right and wrong, exist in imitation, and fall unmeaningly into the current of pleasure. I know you will be pleased with this conversation, and therefore I will not curtail it, though my pen itches to come to the conclusion. —

“ I am speaking,” continued Darrell, “ from sentiments which must present themselves to every rational, sober-minded man, let his religious persuasions be what they may : — it is too early for me to argue from religion ; but I will say to *you*, that, after an impartial comparison of the two characters, those of jealous honour and yielding meekness, I think the former noble, but the latter loveliness itself ; and I have persuaded myself that they are not incompatible in persons of good sense and good hearts. I have more than once alluded to a man, whom I knew in the early part of my life, whose total absence of resentments, whose resignation and forgiveness, heaped, unintended by him, coals of fire on the head of one who had

injured him. I meant to speak more of him to you, but it must be at a less worldly moment:—the remembrance of that man—Oh! Vernon, what has pride to do in this piece of moulded transient clay?”

Darrell was here much affected; and I am confident that in his reflections he touched the string that has vibrated the misery of his life.—

“But a truce to morality,” continued he, “and a truce to memory:—I will tell you what I propose to do. It is out of my power to avoid Mariton; if I could, I would;—but, that not being the case, he must be made immediately to know that I do not mean to avoid him. Will you accompany me to-morrow to Arthur’s, which he daily frequents, and leave the result to circumstances and to providence?”

“He will insult you.”

“I think not; but, if he means it, it is better that it should not be delayed.”

Knowing Darrell’s command of temper, his presence of mind, and the dignity with which he can deliver his sen-

timents, I had a hope that Mariton would be swayed by the firmness he would find in him. I consented, though I was to have left town in the morning, and we spent the evening together. This is the reason we contented ourselves with sending to enquire for the ladies after the ball : — we should otherwise have come in person.

He took me up at one o'clock, and we drove to St. James's street : — we made no enquiry for Lord Mariton in going into the house ; but we were soon convinced of his having been there by finding Darrell's note open on the large table. It being early, there were but few gentlemen in the room : — there were two officers to whom Darrell's person was known, though they were not acquainted with him ; two gentlemen sat in another part of the room ; and there was a young man of the name of Ajax, whom I had sometimes seen with Mariton ; he gave me a nod of recognition and looked at Darrell, with whose person he was not at all acquainted.

"So," said he, "the renowned Sir Francis Darrell is not fond of fighting?"

I saw it was all over, and now thought it impossible that Darrell could do otherwise than meet Lord Mariton.

"Why do you say so, Sir?" said I.

"There it is," replied he, "under his own hand."

Darrell took up the note, and, having cast his eye upon it, put it into his pocket. The youth, surveying him from head to foot, observed that that note belonged to Lord Mariton, who had left it upon the table. Darrell, without making an immediate reply, took a chair near the table where the officers were sitting, and on which was a small dress-sword belonging to one of them. After a short pause, finding the eyes of the remarker still upon him,

"I rather think, Sir," said he, "that this note belongs to Sir Francis Darrell."

"It is directed to Lord Mariton."

"It was written by Sir Francis."

"You know the contents of it?"

"Perfectly."

"In leaving it here, it was Lord Mariton's intention to expose the writer of it."

"For what?"

"For cowardice."

"Sir Francis Darrell is not a coward; but may I ask with whom I have the honour of conversing?"

"My name, Sir, is Ajax; and yours?"

"Is Francis Darrell."

Mr. Ajax was a little surprised, but, giving more credit to the written note than to the oral assertion, he foolishly said:

"Oh! I don't wonder now that you have pocketed the note;" and he winked knowingly towards the officers, to whom the business was now become interesting: the other two gentlemen also gave their attention.

"I could retort that speech with acrimony," said Darrell, "but that would not prove my courage; and I own I wish to avoid a duel."

"I know you do."

"Do you also know upon what grounds?"

"The usual one, I suppose."

"Mr. Ajax," said Darrell, "you have now gone far enough: you had better stop. You see what pains I take to avoid a quarrel. — You have insulted me, but you may go." —

"Sir!" said Ajax, with a tremendous voice and a frown.

"Still you may go," said Darrell, with the greatest composure.

"Sir, I shall expect," roared Ajax.

"Stop a moment, Mr. Ajax, and I will endeavour to convince you that you are wrong in imputing cowardice to a man who does not like fighting." This remark, and the firmness of Darrell's tone, evidently had some effect on Ajax's nerves.

"I don't see," said he, "what one has to do with a man who won't defend himself."

"There you come to the point," said Darrell: "I *will* defend myself." Ajax retreated three steps; — the officers smiled. — "And what's more, I will chastise insult if I cannot manage to



bear it. There is no want of swords and horse-whips even in this room.”

As he said this, he looked at the sword on the table, which the owner with a little rattan pushed forward. It was evident that Mr. Ajax's conduct had made him no friends in the company present. One of the other gentlemen, who had been riding, tossed his whip upon the large table. By this time Mr. Ajax had receded half-way to the door of the coffee-room.

“Well!” cried he, “it is Mariton's business, not mine: if he chooses to let you keep the note, with all my heart,”—and out he walked. — There was a general laugh.

“Gentlemen,” said Darrell, “I am very awkwardly situated, and I fear I shall have to entertain you unpleasantly still longer.”

“*He*, I think,” said one of the officers, “will molest you no more; but Lord Mariton has fought, and, above all things, piques himself upon his adroitness at the sword.”

“I am sorry for it,” said Darrell:

"here is my friend, Mr. Vernon ; here are you, gentlemen, lately returned from lavishing your blood and exposing your lives ; and every coxcomb assumes a right, if he does not like your face, to call upon you to fight him. — It is absurd."

The officers gently shrugged their shoulders, as much as to say " What's to be done ?"

" I am not conscious of having given cause of offence to Lord Mariton : — he put his card into my hand at a ball, and I returned it to him, as you have seen by my note. I have lately made it a principle, not to be engaged in a premeditated duel ; but I will convince Lord Mariton and such men, that it is not from want of courage. If he is determined to kill me or be killed himself, one of the alternatives will probably take place ; but, if I have the misfortune to put him to death, it will not be voluntarily — it will be in defence of my own life."

Several gentlemen now came in, one or two of whom knew Darrell, and shook hands with him. Soon after came Lord

Mariton with Mr. Ajax, who, it was clear, had been giving him an account of what had passed, for he brought a sword with him. He came bustling in.

"Where's my note?" said he, "I'll have it." Anger and an assumed contempt appeared in his face, as he looked at Darrell.

"May I, Sir," said Darrell in a whisper to the officer, "beg the favour of being allowed to hold this in my hand a little while."

"By all means, Sir," replied the officer, pushing his sword forward. — Darrell took it into his hand — nobody seemed disposed to interfere.

"Where is my note, Sir?" repeated Mariton, addressing him.

"Do not be too hasty, my Lord — why do you seek my life?"

"I don't want your life, Sir; I want my note, and I will have it."

"I am very sorry for it: I cannot give it you, for I consider it as mine; but I will put it in your reach, and you may take it."

... He took the note out of his pocket,

and, drawing the sword he had in his hand, placed the paper on it, drawn up to the hilt. His antagonist's sword was instantly unsheathed.

"Lord Mariton, still think, I beg of you," cried Darrell; — "you hesitate — I beseech you to reflect — it is not too late."

Mariton's resolution was evidently suspended for a few moments, but, seeing every body's eye upon him, he flung his scabbard away, and mustering all his art, he attacked Darrell, who parried his thrusts with the greatest skill, when, suddenly, without having made a single lunge, he caught the hilt of Mariton's sword upon the hilt of his own, and wrenched it out of his hand.

"Bravo, bravo!" resounded from every mouth in the room.

"Lord Mariton," said Darrell, presenting him his sword, "I do not wish to make a triumph of my success: — there is your sword: — I desire no apology for the misrepresentation of my courage."

He is an unfeeling puppy, or he would have seized the opportunity to

manifest some admiration at least at such noble conduct.

“ ’Pon my soul,” said he, “ this is too much,” and walked away. His want of feeling was compensated by the feelings of all present ; and I am confident that there was not a man there who would not be proud to call Darrell friend.

I cannot conclude without observing that Ajax’s character is not a singular one ; we have Ajaxes, whose reputation for courage is gained in no better a way than by bullying on the safe side. The indignation of the few who had witnessed his heroism was shown as he followed his friend Mariton out of the room. The name of Ajax was echoed to his ears with an allusion to the less honourable instrument of punishment — but he turned his deaf ear.

When Darrell thanked the officer for his sword, the latter assured him that he should value it particularly for the honour which had been done it. You need not be told, my dear Godfrey, that we returned home highly gratified with the result of the adventure. I could not have slept

if I had not discharged my mind of the feelings it gave me, and which I could not find any of you to share with me. I shall certainly be back in town at the end of next week or beginning of the following, to go to the masquerade. My kind regards to Mr. Saville and the ladies.

Ever faithfully yours,

L. VERNON.

## LETTER LVIII.

*Angelica to Augusta.*

Signa, March.

MY DEAREST AUGUSTA,

WITH what delight do I now take up my pen, as it is to give you so much pleasure. — First, I am coming to you almost directly : — in the next place, we have got fast hold of Mr. Dartford, and without a wife. We have absolutely, as you desired, caged him at Signa; and we never let him go to Florence, or out of the house, without a chain about him. You will readily imagine, my dear Gusta, what heart-felt satisfaction I experience in communicating these tidings to you.

About the time that your letter, and that of my dear Mr. Saville to my father, reached us, Mr. and Mrs. Dorrington arrived at Florence. After you left us

it was always the Marchese's intention to go to England as soon as the affair in law was terminated, not doubting the favourable conclusion of it : but, though favourably terminated, my father's presence is indispensable for some time longer, and he would probably have kept me to accompany him and my mother in the autumn, had it not been for these letters, and the acquaintance we have formed with Mr. and Mrs. Dorrington, and their daughter, a very fine girl indeed, about sixteen. The opportunity being most favourable, the Marchese's desire to comply with your father's wish has prevailed ; and I am now preparing every thing for my journey.

The Dorringtons propose to coast it and go to Nice, and thence through France to Paris, where they hope to be before the end of this month. After a short stay at Paris they will proceed to England ; their intention being to reach home early in April. Whatever letters you may have written I trust will arrive before our departure ; but, if not, they will meet me in Paris, whither they will



be immediately sent by the post : there I shall also expect a letter from you direct, acknowledging the receipt of this, and giving me farther details of the interesting characters and circumstances with which your letters have made me acquainted ; — but you must not now expect me to notice at length all that strikes me in your dear letters, because, while I stay, I have much to do, and many visits to make ; and on the journey it will be still less in my power ; — but I shall think more and more of you as I approach nearer to you ; and when we meet I will impart to you all my thoughts and all my feelings. Oh ! what happiness is in store for us ! I already know Grove-Park, Manor-House, the Priory, Mount-Vernon. — Talk of me to the dear inhabitants.

Mrs. Dartford, dear lady, will be happy to hear that her son is to travel with us. Mr. Dorrington is quite pleased with him, and is delighted with the thoughts of his company ; and if he should fall in love with Miss Dorrington there will be no harm, and perhaps no objection on

either side, I mean with their parents, but one: — that would be a great one with Mrs. Dartford: — she is a Protestant. — In all other respects it would be an excellent match: — she is handsome, and the only child of a gentleman of large fortune; and he is really a very fine young man. But you may assure Mrs. Dartford, with my love, that I will not let the chain go till I place it in her hands. I have a long story to tell you of Mademoiselle Cornélie and Signorina Clementina, of their pulling caps, as *we say in English*, and of the narrow escape of their lover; but I must reserve it till we meet. We laugh at him, and I think our laughing has had a good effect. He wants to talk again to me about love, but I laugh and keep him in order. He has *solemnly* promised to let me keep his heart till I get him to England: — he is anxious to extend the promise to life, but I would take it for no longer a time than till I could make it over to his mother.

I am writing in haste, for my mother and aunt are waiting for me to go with

## LETTER LIX.

*Augusta to Angelica.*

Hanover-Square, March.

A THOUSAND, thousand thanks to my dear Marchese — but you will not be able to give them; you will be much nearer to me when you receive this. I will write to your dear mother myself. — Oh! how my heart throbbed when I read your dear letter! It has given me more joy than I can express; more hope, more dependence on the future than I have had for some time. I had many fears about myself, the state of my heart, my resolution. The prospect of your being soon with me has cleared away clouds that seemed gathering over me. I shall be strengthened to meet the difficulties in my way by the assistance of my dearest Angelica.

Yes, difficulties, my dear sister — difficulties arising where I least expected them, in the hearts of my beloved father and cousins. Do not, you cannot, suppose them unkind : — it is in their excess of kindness I find difficulties ; it is how I shall withstand their wishes. Heaven bless them, they seem to me to have lost their reason on one point : — they have all lost their hearts to your friend's preserver, which blinds them to facts, and makes them see what has not happened. — A new and strong occurrence convinces me of there being some grounds for the report respecting him and Lady Betty Bramblebear, which they treat as unimportant and discountenanced by him : — here they shut their eyes. But they open them to see that he has lost his heart to me, though it is evident he takes pains to show the contrary ; nay, has even declared it to George in the letter enclosing that to me ; for what else can he mean by saying, and *that too* where I did not see much occasion for the remark, — “ That he could never

have any other pretension to me than that of a friend." Indeed, though kind, his whole conduct is calculated to show that his regard for me is completely within the limits of friendship. If I had time I could tell you a hundred instances which prove this ; and yet I see my dear friends in a manner setting their hearts on effecting an union between us. If there is any unkindness, it is that they do not sufficiently consider the tenets by which I hold myself bound beyond this life ; — for, though Sir Francis has made a great, a delightful, advance in his knowledge of truth, he is by no means, and I think never will be, persuaded that our faith is the only well-founded one on earth. And can I, my dear Angelica, suffer myself even to think of uniting myself to one with whom I must so essentially differ ? My friends know this objection, but I am sorry to find that they do not give it that importance which it has with me ; — and their wishes go so far as to anticipate a declaration, for which they are anxious to prepare me to gratify them. Though

I am sure that that declaration will never be made, I cannot dissemble my objection to it; for the arguments of my dear friends tend to persuade me that there is nothing wrong in such a union; that it often takes place and proves happy. I find myself unable to argue with them, and I insist principally on the necessity of a wife being able and bound to submit her opinions, or at least endeavour to make her sentiments accord with her husband's. In this state I cannot but hope, as I believe, that the declaration they look for will not take place.

While I thus lay my mind open to you, my dear sister, I am far from intending to give you any idea that the interest I take in Sir Francis at all diminishes: it encreases: the very circumstance that has again wakened my suspicion of his imperfect nature serves but to encrease my anxiety, that he should in every act be the great character his genius and his perseverance show him to be equal to: — I will not detail it. I shall be obliged to write to you by snatches, we

are now so much engaged ; but a few lines will make you know enough of it. It should, however, be preceded by the account of a very different occurrence. I know not how it is, but the one I allude to is later, and has so run in my head that I lose sight of other things. I will therefore be regular, though I must be brief.

My last gave you an account of the ball at Lady Mount-Vernon's. — When I wrote, I little imagined what was to be the consequence of my dancing with Sir Francis Darrell. That hasty, weak being, Lord Mariton, thought proper not only to insult, but to challenge, him. Will you believe it in these days, that Sir Francis had the resolution, and the good sense to refuse fighting a duel ? He firmly and independently declared that he never would : — the consequence was fresh insults, carried to such a pitch, that Lord Mariton, priding himself on his courage and skill, attacked him in a public coffee-room. How I shudder even now to think of his danger ! But Sir Francis proved the better swords-

man, and to the satisfaction of those who were by disarmed him. Mr. Vernon has given a delightful account of the different conduct of the men; and as I cannot do it justice, I shall send you a copy of his letter to George:—read it before you proceed with this.

What a pity it is that such a noble spirit should have weaknesses which involve its possessor in crimes!—Oh! *that* Lady Betty haunts me so!—A few days after the rencontre with Lord Mariton, Sir Francis called; and he appeared to me exalted by the conduct he had pursued:—the family are more and more charmed with him, and not only the family—every body is courting his acquaintance. Several of George's friends have requested an introduction. For this purpose he wished him to dine with us to-day; and in order to secure his acceptance of the invitation he determined to give it himself. As we were going out in the morning, the day before yesterday, he asked us to carry him to Sir Francis's door in May-Fair:—when we set him down, he said he should be



but a few minutes, and that if we would drive up the street and back again he would by that time rejoin us. In returning, the coachman drove slowly and stopped a few doors short on the opposite side of the street. There was a hackney-coach standing at a little distance from Sir Francis's house. His door opening, our coachman made a move as if intending to draw up, and our attention was attracted in expectation of George. — Guess our surprise on seeing a fine fair boy, fantastically dressed, running out. He had on a scarlet hussar-jacket and pantaloons, trimmed in front, in much the same manner, with silver buttons and twisted silver lace, with which the narrow slit cuffs of his jacket were also embroidered. He had light hair curling round his face, under a feathered fancy-hat. "Look, Caroline," cried I — "What an odd ——" "Good Heavens!" exclaimed she, "can it be?" — Vain was the attempt to hide the face: — Caroline's exclamation and look awakened a suspicion, and our eyes told us that the

her than the lady herself.  
 and sprang into the  
 ch drove off as she  
 e were extremely  
 ed not a word  
 George re-  
 seen nor  
 still tena-  
 on, that these  
 explained; and he  
 opportunity of speaking  
 Francis himself. Alas! Sir  
 not mean to give him the  
 ty. Though he had accepted  
 invitation, he sent an excuse the  
 ext day, with a letter to George, as-  
 suring him that he was under the neces-  
 sity of immediately leaving town for  
 Belmont, whence he would write to him  
 on the subject of his hasty departure.  
 What can he say, Angelica? Will such  
 a man condescend to use feints? He  
 will not. I would rather he should be  
 quite silent than feign a cause. How  
 my heart bleeds for him. — He knows  
 what is right: — he loves it: — but I  
 fear the truth is, that he has hitherto

been so shackled, that he cannot easily withdraw himself from those, I must say, disgraceful chains of a life without religion. But perhaps he is now acting wisely; and his departure from town may be to avoid this lost woman. I will hope it, and I will pray daily for the success of his virtuous resolutions:—I will not forget to pray too for his farther success in the knowledge of true religion.

I must now put down my pen. I shall fold my letters, and put them by as I write them; and when you are approaching Paris I will dispatch them in time to meet you there. You must introduce the Count de B. and Mr. Dorrington;—and you must know Madame Darcy, and *la famille Vertot*. You will be delighted with the French: they are remarked for liveliness, but you will find them also sensible and affectionate; I mean the ladies:—the men are clever and polite, but they seem to have their heads turned with politics, even more than the English. Their general manners I think very pleasing.

I have this moment seen Mrs. Dartford. I wrote to her instantly on receiving your letter ; and she came herself to thank me. You have made her happy. Pray remember me kindly to Mr. Dartford. I think *you*, after all, must be the person to settle him.

Adieu ! for the present.

▲UGUSTA.

## LETTER LX.

*Mr. Vernon to Sir F. Darrell.*

Bath, March.

MY DEAR DARRELL,

HEY for the Vortex! a debate at Mrs. Clatterfield's card-party—Veramore and Lady Standish assisting.

"Who has seen the papers to-day?"

"I." "I." "I."

"What account of Mrs. Groven Groven's rout?"

"Exquisite!" was answered in a trio—treble, second, and base; to which the chorus added: "Three hundred fashionables; no moving."

"There was to be a ball at Lady Mount-Vernon's this week."

"Hardly noticed, except for the appearance of Sir Francis Darrell, and the

lady he was said to have run away with."

"Which lady? ha! ha! ha!"

"Oh! not Lady Betty: the French adventure."

"What! the hand-kissing young lady?"

"What's her name?"

"Sybilla; — a Greek from one of the Ionian isles."

"She's an Italian; — her name is not Sybilla, but Savilla: — her father was an Englishman, who went abroad in consequence of having fought a duel, and liking Italy remained there, adding an *a* to his name."

"That's it, I believe. Who has seen her?"

"I." "I." "I." "She was at Bath last Christmas. — I saw her twice in the pump-room."

"Handsome?"

"Comme ça."

"Is she to be married to him? — That kissing of the hand was sentimental, or —"

A laugh.

"It was not quite the thing to be sure, for a modest young lady; — but the situation was altogether romantic."

Will you have any more, my dear Darrell? "No — folly! I wonder you can write such stuff:" — well then, Darrell, owning that it is stuff, I write only to tell you that there is a large group of the Vortex here, among some of whom that little *stuff* conversation certainly passed, and to tell you also, that I have conceived an idea of a pleasant kind of a dance in allusion to the *Vortex*, which I am endeavouring to get up for the Masquerade next week at the Opera-house. I have engaged the assistance of a good dancer of my acquaintance here, a fanciful fellow; and, what with this and some other quirks, we will have sport.

"I wrote an account of Mariton's discomfiture to Godfrey, for I was afraid you would not tell it yourself. I shall not be a day longer here than my engagement. I hope to find you conquering your scruples, and resolved to give way to the genuine feelings of your heart. She is

the loveliest of women, and you may be the happiest of men. Do not be so weak, I beseech you, as to let her Catholicism stand in your way.

Adieu !

Ever most truly yours,

L. VERNON.



SIR FRANCIS DARRELL.

## LETTER LXI.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Mr. Vernon.*

May-Fair, March.

MY DEAR VERNON,

YOUR letter would be enough to stop the progress of my charitable improvement towards mankind, and to make me again mark them with all the detestation of my former feelings, had I not learned to distinguish between the mass and the dregs of the human species. I am glad of one thing — the spirit with which your letter is written. I see that your good sense is turning that into ridicule, which you have been in the habit of considering as a source of pleasure ; and I conclude from it, that I shall have the happiness of finding that the expostula-

tions of my affection for you have had the effect I wish. Young as you are, what a life of real enjoyment may you look forward to. Let me return the advice you give me. Seek for a lovely and virtuous woman, and be the happiest of men. I know a woman that would make you so, but, alas ! though out of my reach, I have not virtue enough to wish her yours, or to recommend your endeavouring to gain her. The selfish feeling makes me unhappy. I once did say *if* you were worthy of her ; — but I can no longer say it : yet I cannot be so distracted as to imagine, or desire, that she shall pass her life single, that I may not be more wretched than I am.

I have no scruples, my dear Vernon, but one, and that is insurmountable either by her or by me. As for her mode of worshipping the Deity, it proves her at least endowed with a piety which bespeaks amiable and virtuous affections ; and I could trust to her good sense to discover errors which she owns in her letter to me that she has not investigated. *She* does not say *errors*, but only

that she was *led* into the faith she professes. But why talk or think of a slight, surmountable, objection, when there lies in my way a frightful impossibility. Yes, Vernon, impossibility. I have lately more than once attempted to enter upon this subject with you, since you came to town — but you have seen how the very thought of it appalled me. The disclosure of this secret, which has been preying upon my life, upon my soul, for nearly ten years past, is an act exceeded in agony only by the real circumstances of it — but

“ I am settled, and bend up  
Each corporal agent to this terrible feat.”

Convinced of the impossibility of my obtaining this lovely woman's hand, and determined on not offering myself to her, I have examined my mind to see how I could bear the idea of her becoming another's. The idea is torture to me — but I have been accustomed to torture ; and, though I shall be able to find no antidote, I have imagined a balm. It consists in the resolution I have come to, in respect to the future years of my life. Happi-

ness is out of my reach, but I may recover myself and die well.

You know how impossible I have found it to spend my fortune notwithstanding the various channels through which I disperse it, and that I am overwhelmed with wealth. — Funds upon funds have been accumulating in my name. To the disposal of these, I have a full moral right, not only now, but beyond my life. I have a legal right to dispose of my estates also; but I agree with the Scotch gentleman, who adduced the necessity of laws as a proof of the roguery and baseness of human nature: he is but a sorry reasoner if not a wicked man, who makes use of all the legal means he has to gratify his passions. I do not think that any person has a moral right to dispose of hereditary property beyond his life. As soon as I have made the disclosure of my painful, painful secret, I shall go abroad, and spend the remainder of my youth in distant countries, meaning to return when time shall have had its influence on my passions, and endeavour to spend the evening of life, in true and

tranquil friendship. In contemplation of this resolve, I have made a will. I have left my landed estates to Mr. Edmund Darrell, my second cousin, with whom, (no wonder!) I have had but very little connection, though I know him to be a very gentleman-like, worthy man. I think he has as much right to the succession as I to the possession of them. He is not only the representative of the family; but he has to retrieve the honour of the title which I have sullied, and I have no doubt he will. But in devising the estates to him, I conceive that I have a moral right to burden them in a degree. Had I married, they should still have been his after my life, if I had had no children, but they would have been chargeable with the dower of my wife; I have therefore charged them to that amount, to be paid to Miss Saville, during her life, whether she live single or marry: the whole of my funded property I have left at her entire disposal. The will is written and executed in form.

But there is little balm in this — I

may live fifty years longer. A penful of ink has raised this castle in the air : — another penful may sweep it away. My heart, though much lighter than it was, is still heavy : — it is now heavy with love and a retrospect that cuts off hope. Could **SHE** be happy — Oh ! the inconsistency of the heart ! Her happiness with another, I was going to say, would delight me : — alas ! it would torture me : — it would do both ; but time would diminish the agony and encrease the delight. I will therefore bring up my mind to endure the thought. She cannot be mine, Vernon. If — I cannot write it. Her father's fortune, though good, is involved, and certainly not equal to such a spirit as hers, which, content with little, is unbounded in its graceful charities : — how much better than I would she dispose of the means in my hands. Instead of bequeathing the funds as a legacy, I wish and intend to make them over to her by a deed of gift. Were she married to my friend, I would not hate him. I will never feel that horrid passion. I would entreat him to reside occasionally at Bel-

mont during my life, and to make use of two-thirds of its income in promoting the happiness of a being to whom I owe so much, and whom I love to distraction, but must love in vain. The other third is infinitely more than adequate to the life I purpose to lead; and, when age has fully reduced love to friendship, I would beg for an apartment to live and die in their arms rationally and happy.

This blot — I wish not to conceal it, — is made by a tear: — Oh how my heart swells! — it will break.

Think of what I have written. — I give no advice as to any particular woman: — but such is my resolution, and my balm.

I shall not be in town when you return from Bath. — I set off to-morrow for Belmont. I have been driven abruptly from London, less by the feelings I have been expressing to you, than by a circumstance, which I cannot explain at Godfrey's, and after which it is impossible for me to see them while it is unexplained. Yesterday Godfrey called to make a point of my dining with him to-morrow, which I promised to do. A

madness had seized Lady Betty Bramblebear in the morning, and at the time that Godfrey knocked she was in the library, in the clothes of the boy she fantastically calls her page. She seems to me not to be sensible even of the *Spartan virtue*. I don't know how she escaped the suspicion of the servants: — I think she did not. — I had given her a very serious lecture, and was urging her to go, when we heard Godfrey's rap. She had just time to avoid him, by going through the opposite door. I have no doubt that Morris knew her, from his thinking it necessary to say to me that Mrs. Godfrey and Miss Saville were in Godfrey's carriage, and saw that lad go out of the house. They must have known her. Let me know on your return to town. — You shall hear from me soon on a much more serious subject: mean while write to me.

Ever yours,

F. DARRELL.



## LETTER LXII.

*Mr. Vernon to Sir Francis Darrell.*

London. March.

MY DEAR DARRELL,

I NEVER was more affected in my life than on perusing your last letter. Good God! how you cast away happiness! I beseech you to make use of your reason, and of your religion too, to recall you to a just sense of your situation in life, and to a resolution very different from that which you have taken. "Impossibility!" There is nothing on earth you can tell, or even imagine, that will convince me of such an impossibility. I have not pressed you on the painful subject—I would not do it—but I have imagined much more than you can have to communicate; and I maintain, whatever it be, that nothing but a morbid sensibility can actuate such feelings and reso-

lutions. That there is very serious cause for your sorrow I am convinced ; but I cannot help thinking that its importance is magnified a hundred-fold, by the knowledge of it being confined to your own breast : the best advice, therefore, which I can give, is at once to unburden your mind—I am willing to sustain the weight with you ; or, as it seems to be of a nature which peculiarly interferes with your affection for Miss Saville, what think you of revealing your difficulty in a letter to her ? Make use of me in any way, but do not longer delay opening your heart, whatever exertion it costs you :—It is less intolerable, it is less dangerous to the mind than concealment, that worm in the bud.

Your *will*, and your sentiments upon it, and the disposal of your fortune in your life-time, do not in the least surprise me. I know you so well, that I can readily imagine that the comfort of your life would be comparatively ensured by such a step—but I trust that these ideas will all prove but the effervescence of melancholy thoughts, for which a lovely

physician shall find the antidote. The manner in which you think of me, and allude to me, binds me to you if possible more than ever ; but think not, Darrell, that I would place myself in such a situation for ten times your fortune. Your Augusta, yes I will repeat it, has no heart for me ; and, between us, I will also repeat, that she has no heart for any man on earth but you ; and you are bound to overcome your *impossibility*, be it what it may.

Do not be uneasy about the circumstance relative to Lady Betty : — I have completely removed the pain it had given to your friends in Manover-Square, by showing that part of your letter to Godfrey. She was recognised by Mrs. Godfrey. — If my information is good she will not molest you again. It was her final effort upon your heart, and, finding it shut against her, she has chosen a more gallant *cortejo*, in the person of Signor Rivers.

Your letter, my dear Darrell, has almost unfitted me for the masquerade ; but I will do what I generally do when I

can — *hope*. There is a most excellent understanding between that pleasing passion and my nerves : — these help to foster hope ; and in return, hope fortifies them. I certainly have a most buoyant set of nerves. I would to heaven yours were as serviceable to you. If the masquerade produces any thing, which I think will enliven a half hour for you, I will let you have it. I think it will ; for I picked up Rufus at Bath, where I found him transfusing sanctity and love, — downright terrestrial love. Of all affectation, that of religion is the most detestable, because of all subjects it is that which demands the greatest sincerity. I am, it must be confessed, far in arrear ; but I would rather continue an ignorant sinner all my life, than make religion the medium of sin. Rufus, I fear, has some notion of a necessity for cause preceding effect, for sinning preceding forgiveness ; which doctrine I hear he has been preaching with some success at Bath, where he has also ruined the virtuous principles of one or two young men who had been only brought

up with the common ideas of right and wrong. I have no compunction in getting a laugh out of such a hypocrite; and I intend to raise one, if I can, at the masquerade, for which I have brought him purposely to London, after he had preached against the wickedness of it, before me, for half an hour to the pretty little wife of an Evangelical attorney, who had come to Bath, a martyr to the gout. I wish you were in spirits, and with me.

There is a young Italian nobleman, one of Mr. Saville's friends, just arrived. I think you have heard him mention him. His name is Olivastro. — Saville has made him over to me, requesting I would show him the town. Adieu! for the present. You shall hear from me again in a few days.

Ever yours,

L. VERNON.

## LETTER LXIII.

*Mr. Vernon to Sir Francis Darrell.*

Piccadilly, March.

I do not wonder that our preachers and monitors set their faces and their pens against masquerades. Who is it that says, a masquerade gives confidence to the timorous, and kindles ardour in the cold; eludes the vigilance of jealousy, and removes the restraint of bashfulness; demolishes the outworks of chastity, and breaks the silence of virgin modesty? Though I enjoyed it much last night, I must, after all, say it is a silly entertainment as to the generality of the masks that make the crowd, and, when we deduct the views of the Vortex, insipid. There was an immense number of masks of all kinds of dimensions, distortions, and dresses, from all countries real and

imaginary ; — fairies, genii, devils, as well as Circassians, Turkish sultanas, and Algerines. The good company, that go merely to look at this folly, must surely be soon tired of it. They talk of wit ; but do we often meet with it at a masquerade ? There is but one way of giving relish to it ; and that is to prepare your amusement before hand, and to get acquainted with the disguises of your acquaintance. If I can strike out a few ridiculous scenes, I enjoy it ; otherwise I would rather speak to a pretty woman's face than talk to a mask which may hide ugliness.

I have generally managed to have sport at a masquerade ; and last night I had two or three good scenes. An extraordinary humour took one of the masks, disguised as a monk, to attach himself to our party almost the whole of the night. I am confident it was a person who knows us very well ; but I cannot account for the singularity of the unvaried object of his amusement. When he quitted me, he assailed Mrs. Godfrey, and Miss Saville, — always with the greatest humility. From

them he returned to me. I think he knew us all, except Miss Saville; yet he seemed the most attracted by her, and, not knowing her to be a Catholic, his pretended aim was to make her his proselyte. He told me in mock confidence, that he had a special commission from the Pope to convert the whole of the united kingdom, and that he had very nearly succeeded in his object, for which he was to be rewarded with a hat.

“Have you found it difficult?” said I.

“I find more difficulty with the ladies than with the gentlemen,” replied he.

“How comes that? I should have thought the reverse.”

“It’s a sign you are not well acquainted with the English character,” said he:

“Very few of the women, comparatively speaking, want absolution: — all the men do. Think, my good Sir, what an advantage this is. You would only have to come to me to-morrow morning, to repair all the breaches of to-night — think of that.”



"You are the most eloquent of monks," said I, "and now pray tell me where you live, that I may come to you in the morning."

"That's a secret," replied he: "nobody knows where I live; — I am a high character incog. — I'll come to you: — where do you live?"

"Do you," said I, "know such a place as Cold-Bath-fields?"

"I shall find my way," replied he.

"You will see a large building within walls, something like a monastery; knock there and ask for one Mr. Aris; and tell him to keep you there till I come."

"By your looks," said he, "I shan't have long to wait for you." — "Do you know," continued he, "that young lady I have been talking to?"

"Yes, I know something of her."

"Can't you manage to bring her along with you? She is the most obstinate heretic I ever met with."

I could not help laughing.

"Why do you laugh?" said he.

"To think that you should find so

much more difficulty with an inexperienced girl than with an old sinner like me."

"That's precisely the reason : — she is inexperienced and does not know what is good for her ; but you do."

"How do you manage to convert such obstinate girls?"

"Why, I never should, without the assistance of such pure converts as you."

"That's not bad," cried I; "which you know is the genteel come-off, when wit stops for want of an answer."

"Mind then that you are good, and bring the damsel with you to Cold-Bath-fields."

"How shall I induce her to come?"

"Why, you experienced sinner! not know how to induce a damsel! Tell her we reverence marriage more than you English people do."

"Call you that a good inducement? Shall I say that, once married, there's no divorce?"

"That's a doubtful argument — it must not be advanced but on due consideration."

"Shall I say, she may be a cardinal's lady?"

"Pooh! sinner! Cardinals do not marry — nevertheless, it is an argument not to be rejected without due consideration also: — if you use it you may hint that I am to be a cardinal by-and-bye, that is, when the United Kingdom begins again to pay Peter-Pence, which can be at no great distance of time; for as soon as the Catholics are called to parliament — you understand me."

"I do: — You cardinals will all have English ladies."

"Mum!" said he, putting his finger to the immense nose of his ruddy mask, on which grew two large pimples —  
"Mum!"

And he went off to beset Miss Saville again.

Having prepared myself with different dresses so as to be recognised at times by Rufus and some others, and to be completely disguised when I pleased, I put my machinery into play, and brought forward my dance, in which Rufus took a part. It was conducted in a fine style by Harry Lumley, my young acquaintance

at Bath, whom I mentioned to you in my letter from thence. The idea was to represent a picture of the Vortex in emblematical action. — Lumley, as leader, took the usual garb of folly, a Joseph's coat, the cap and bells, with folly's sceptre, an image of itself, *la marotte*, in his hand. He led the way, followed by a line of male and female masks dancing to light airy music. Making room he took his position in the middle — his company arranging themselves in a large circle at a distance round him. He then beckoned them with his *marotte*, when a bustling scramble for partners took place, and waltzers were seen, as they turned themselves, moving in a spiral line nearer and nearer to him, till they came close; continuing then to waltz on the same spot till there was a press at the centre, when the dancers appearing confused, he shook his *marotte* at them, and made his way through the crowd. Another scramble ensued for partners; and the men all took different women, and began a new spiral waltzing round Folly, the centre of attraction. The

men were all dandies, and their partners all nudes. They swam off very sweetly and lovingly at first, but scuffled and parted as they got towards the engulfing centre. Observe, that this was in conformity with an opinion lately expressed by you ; for Harry Lumley was for gracefully sloping the waltzers through the spiral line, so as to begin again on the same spot, which he says could have been done ; but I confess the grace of the cross-sloping to the top seemed to me as difficult as returning from the centre to the circumference of the Vortex ; and, as I am regenerating under your auspices, I think that the confusion, break up, and taking one another's ladies, marked the analogy better. It was repeated a good many times, and attracted the attention of all the company.

But the scene that diverted me most was the success of a plan I had laid with Harry Lumley, Aspell, Crawley, and Foster for a laugh at Rufus. We dined together. Talking of the pleasure to come, I observed, as if casually, that we met with a dull repetition of the

same kind of characters at all the masquerades.

"This is the very first I have been at," said Rufus; "it will be all new to me."

"The dance we have," said Lumley, "is new."

"Yes," said I, "but it won't last long."

"But it will be new," said Rufus.

"Yes, it will be new," replied I, "but we want something else for the night; who will start some idea; come, Rufus — come Aspell."

"I can't think," said Rufus, "unless we could dress ourselves up like little school-girls, and dance allemands."

"A good thought," cried Lumley; "but it is not new."

"I beg your pardon, Mr. Lumley," said Rufus; "it's quite new to me."

"You may improve upon the idea," replied Lumley; "I have never heard of a sucking child at a masquerade."

"Admirable!" cried I. "I'll go in that character, and Palmer shall be my nurse."

" Oh! oh!" roared Rufus, bursting out laughing; " I go to suckle you! Oh! oh!"

" Upon second thoughts," said I, " I can't undertake the character, for I have some engagements in the course of the night, with which it would interfere."

" I'd rather be the child than the nurse," said Rufus.

" Well, so be it," said I, " and Aspell will be the nurse. What say you, Aspell?"

" With all my heart, and I will give Palmer custards and jellies out of a pap-boat."

" It will be very laughable," said I; " you will be the best characters of the night, and will be celebrated next morning in all the newspapers."

" Can't we get a cradle big enough for my dear child?" said Aspell.

" Oh! oh! Mr. Aspell!" exclaimed Rufus, laughing, " a cradle big enough for me!"

" Why not?" said I; " I'll engage to have one ready by twelve o'clock, and we shan't want it before." Rufus

laughed at the thought, and so did we. It was settled, that the matter should be entirely left to the management of Lumley and myself. Accordingly, when we had sufficiently amused ourselves with the Vortex dance, we repaired to our dressing-room, where I had taken care to have every thing ready.

"Lord have mercy on my soul!" exclaimed Rufus, on seeing a cradle six foot five by two and a half. "Who ever could think of making such a thing as that?"

"Oh! it's very easily done," said I.

He examined it, and finding it nothing but a deal frame, with a little pasteboard, which readily took the form that was to be given it, he expressed his amazement at the ingenious simplicity of the contrivance, and vowed he could have done it himself. But he was nevertheless at a loss to know how it was to be carried with him in it.

"Like a sedan," said Aspell, "here are the poles, which will be drawn out when it's in the room; and when there you must only whimper, and sometimes



pretend to cry, but you must not speak. Remember you are a child."

"Nor show my teeth?" said Rufus.

"By no means show your teeth," cried Aspell, "or I won't suckle you."

"What not laugh?"

"Can't you laugh like a child? Besides your mask will hide your teeth."

During this preamble, we put a baby's cap and frock on Rufus, and Aspell dressed himself as a nurse, with a very large false bosom, a high cap, and very high-heeled shoes, so that he was gigantic. Rufus laughed at the figure immoderately, and let us undress him without much notice, till finding himself almost naked, "Why! what the deuce are you at?" cried he, continuing his laugh; on which Aspell, playing the nurse, went and coaxed and hushed him, till we had fairly undressed him for bed; when, without giving him time to consider, he lifted him up like a child, with our assistance, put him into the machine, and, tucking the clothes well about him to preserve decency, the poles were run in, and Rufus hurried away, laughing ready

to kill himself. Having set him down in a convenient spot, the poles were taken away, and Aspell, drawing a stool to the head of the cradle, began hushing and rocking, midst a roar of laughter from the gathering crowd — “Lullaby! lullaby!” — Rufus, mindful of the character he had to support, spoke not a word, but occasionally whimpered to keep up the farce. Aspell patted and pretended to suckle him, when Rufus, unable to bear the constant rocking, pulled him close, and whispered; “For the Lord’s sake, my friend, don’t rock any more, I am sick at the stomach.”

“Hush! By, baby, by!” said Aspell, and, pretending to sit down, slipped away. Our dresses being altered, we got close to the cradle to observe. Every one passing gave him a *hush* and a *lullaby*; some stood to look. Aspell, having got the secret of his stomach, put his foot on the rocking-step, and gave it a gentle see-saw. After whining and crying like a child, Rufus was unable to restrain a manlier kind of groan, “Oh!” of which

no notice being taken, he howled out, "Zounds! I shall be sick."

The gentle rocking continuing, and no nurse coming to him, he clapped a hand on each side of the cradle, and, thrusting out his head, first on one side and then on the other, in search of his nurse, he roared, "I tell you, Aspell, by the Lord, I shall be sick."

He looked in vain for Aspell; for, though he saw his foot on the rocker, he knew not to whom the foot belonged.

"You, Sir," said he, "who belong to that foot, I beg that it may take you away."

Aspell removed his foot, upon which I rocked on the opposite side. His head was out there instantly. Heated beyond bearing by his agitation and the crowd, he tore off his mask, and exhibited a perspiring visage.

"I insist, Sir, you take your foot away; this is not your cradle." There was a burst of laughter. "Lord! the child can speak! who would have thought

it?" We gave him a little respite from rocking while he sat up, looking round with his laced cap and frock.

"What a pretty child," says one; "I wonder how old he is. Lord! it has got its teeth; what a shame to be in a cradle! — Let's toss him out!"

Poor Rufus, conscious how unprepared he was for such a toss, cried out, "Now, you would not do such a thing, would you? Fie for shame! Sir, this is Mr. Vernon's cradle. We are in joke; take care, Sir, take care you don't toss the cradle over."

"By no means," said the mask; "I did not know Mr. Vernon had such a fine child."

"Puff and nonsense," cried Rufus; "go about your business." He now began to be very impatient. Seeing me looking on, he beckoned me with his finger.

"My worthy Sir," said he, in a low voice, "do you know Mr. Vernon?"

"Intimately."

"It makes me extremely happy to hear you say so. I am his particular

friend. Do me the favour to go and bring him here."

"I will," said I, in a feigned voice; "but will you first satisfy my curiosity? Did your papa come over to this country with Captain Gulliver? Are all children in your country as big as you when born? And are ye all born with teeth?"

"None of your tricks upon travellers," quoth Rufus, "I know all that nonsense is fair at a masquerade; but will you be kind enough now to go and fetch your friend Vernon here."

"I never saw such a child in all my life. Why nurse, you should whip this child."

"Oh dear me! dear me!" cried Aspell, now returned as the nurse, "since I have been away, some fairy has changed my boy. La! what a different nose!"

"I say, I say, Aspell," said Rufus, in a gentle voice, "come here, I want to speak to you."

"Thee art not *my* child. I'll not come near thee. Oh! what a pretty babe was mine."

"Do, my dear Sir," said Rufus to a

stander-by, "pull that big woman close to me."

"What, an't you done sucking yet?" said the mask; "for shame!"

"Let me but catch hold of her," said Rufus, "and you shall see. I'll give her leave to get out of my clutches again, if she can."

"Oh! what a naughty child! fie! fie! Go to sleep." Some one rocked the cradle.

"No more of that," roared he. "I say, Aspell, do tell me where Vernon is gone; I am sure he would not have left me so long if he knew all, — some unavoidable assignation I am sure; but I say, my dear Aspell, I want to tell you something, I do indeed."

Here his eye caught the goddess Diana coming towards the cradle. This female divinity was no other than the muscular Miss Belcher.

"Hah!" continued he, "here is a friend; this must be Vernon's cousin. I say, Lady Diana!" The mask went up to the cradle.

"My dear, good Lady Barbara," said he. —

"I don't know you," said the mask. —

"Not know me! I shall never forget your salve, and great kindness. You know Mr. Palmer, Mr. Rufus Palmer, don't you? Down with you last Christmas. This is all play. Pray bring your cousin to me."

"Where are my nymphs?" said Diana. "Bring me a rod, a birch rod; — this is not the first little boy I have chastised."

"Lord have mercy on me! You may go about your business, Mrs. Diana."

"He is not so ugly neither," cried Diana. "Come, I won't whip it this time! kiss and make friends. Coo, doo."

"Go, go, — get along with you, you Jezebel!" roared Rufus.

"Get along!" said Diana, "you dirty, puny, little thing; get along? eh! Take that." As she spoke, the goddess gave him a slap upon the cheek, that echoed at a considerable distance.

"You, he-woman" bawled he: "catch

me again at a place where they dress up Mendozas and Belchers for female goddesses! Catch me at a masquerade again."

The twinging of the slap was still operating on his choler, when a smart boy ran up, saying, "Which is Mr. Palmer, pray?"

"D— Mr. Palmer," said Lumley; "I know no more of Mr. Palmer than that child in the cradle there. Little one, is your name Palmer?"

"You be cursed," cried Rufus.

"I have a letter for him," said the boy.

Rufus, between the shame of being recognised in his distress, and desire to have the letter, called to him, "I say, my lad, come here;" the boy went forward. "Is the letter from Mr. Vernon?"

"No, Master," replied the boy; "it's from a lady."

"Give it me directly," cried Rufus.

"No, no, Master," said the boy; "you'll tear it to bits. Where's your nurse?"



"Stuff! I know Mr. Palmer, and I'll take care he shall have it." Here he snatched it out of the no-unwilling hand of the boy, and opened it.

"Look, look!" cried a mask, "that child can read already."

Rufus, intent upon the ideas which the note excited, paid no attention to this remark. It was written by Lumley, in a female hand; the words were:

"Where is Palmer? Where is he?  
Him my eyes have sought in vain;—  
Let him come to yonder tree,  
And a kiss he there may gain.

SILVIA."

"I have seen this hand-writing before," said Rufus in soliloquy; then, calling the boy, "My lad," said he, "I am Mr. Palmer. I suppose you know this is all play. I have lost Mr. Vernon, and want to get out."

"Shall I help you?" said the boy, making an effort to pull off the bed-clothes.

"Hoh! hoh! hoh!" roared out Rufus, seizing the boy's hands; "Zooks, child! you must not do that:—I'll tell

you what though you may do — By the Lord that's a good thought. I'll give you five shillings, if you will go outside and bring in two chairmen to take the cradle out of this infernal place."

"I will, Sir," replied the young mask, "I really feel for you."

"That's a good lad." The mask moving away, Rufus called after him; "Mind, five shillings — five and sixpence." As he got a little farther, he called him back; "Boy! Lad! I say, hollo! Mrs. Silvia's boy! the men must bring their poles, remember that; here, look, here are places for them."

"Yes, yes," said the mask, looking back, "I'll take care of that;" and went off.

For some minutes the Monk had been at my side, looking on; and, though my dress was changed, he knew me, by what means, Heaven knows, for his Cold-Bath-fields proselyte.

"Sinner!" said he, "you will be true to your appointment?"

"As you to yours," was my reply.

"What a hardened young creature is

that damsel of your acquaintance!" said he. "She has been brought up a heretic from her cradle — even there the seeds of heresy are sown."

"Suppose," said I, "you try your hand to destroy them before they take root in the cradle before you."

"It is the time," said he, "to prepare the soil for receiving the grain." He advanced; Rufus's eye caught the figure of the Monk as he approached.

"The Lord have mercy on my sinful soul!" ejaculated he; "What have we here? By all that's good, a pioneer of the scarlet woman. Avaunt! Beelzebub! avaunt!"

"Benedicite," said the monk in a mild voice; and, moving his hand as if blessing him; "Benedicite, Infans!"

"Infans!" cried Rufus; "Infans, patruelis, et hæres. There, you see, I can talk Latin as well as you. Now go about your business, do, for the very sight of you makes me perspire."

The Monk calmly drew the stool to the side of the cradle, and sat down facing his prey.

"Get up," cried Rufus; "that's my stool — but you may take it away with you to your master, for never more will I sit upon a stool which you have brimstoned all over. — Come, let me see you fly away with it."

"My child," said the Monk coolly, "it would be as easy for me to fly away with the cradle and you in it."

"Lord! Lord!" exclaimed Rufus; "Heaven protect me! You, Sir! I know all this is fun; but pray go along; I hate the devil even in fun."

"You don't know me, my dear child."

"Yes, I do; and I'll be cursed if you shall make me any child of yours. — You are one of Babylon's pioneers; a prime one too; — you smell of brimstone — go along — you shan't open your mine upon *me*. I say, Beelzebub, if you will go away, I will tell you a secret that will please you."

"I know it already," said the Monk.

"There," cried Rufus, "didn't I know you were the devil? Come, now, let's hear; what is it?"

“ That you have received a billet-doux.”

“ You are a cunning devil, that’s the truth ; but how is that to please you ? Come.”

“ Not as a devil, which I am not, but as a friend.”

Rufus looked him full in the face, and made mouths at him.

“ As a friend,” continued the Monk mildly ; “ and you will say so if you will listen. I never in my life heard a child of your age talk so much.”

“ Truly, Mr. Pioneer, nor at all, I take it ; but none of your friendship for me — so go, go.”

“ Not if it concerns that billet-doux ?”

“ Eh !” cried Rufus.

“ I know the mistress of the boy that brought it.”

“ Are you sure ? Come, I see the devil may be good for something. Are you sure you know her ? What’s her name ?”

“ Oh !” said the Monk, “ it would be easy for me to deceive you. But I am above deceit.”

Rufus made a mouth at him.

"Deceit is no part of my character."

Rufus again made mouths.

"This is some part of your round-about mining, I suppose; but you shan't blow me up, Mr. Babylon; so you may save yourself the trouble of digging any more."

"You forget Silvia," said the Monk.

"If it is she I suspect," said Rufus, "she is the most beautiful creature you ever saw."

"It is she herself," replied the Monk.

"Can you," cried Rufus, "with all your cunning, tell me how I shall make my way from this cradle to that tree? I'm here in swaddling-clothes."

"Nothing easier," said the Monk; "I'll lend you my frock."

"Your frock! Heaven preserve me! You want to wrap me up, and fly away with me. Your frock! Rufus Palmer in the black frock of the scarlet woman!"

Here the Monk replied in verse:—

"Who is Silvia? What is she  
That all our swains commend her?  
Lovely, fair, and plump is she;"

"No, not plump," cried Rufus.  
The Monk went on:—

"The Heavens such grace did lend her,  
That she admired might be."

"I tell you what," said Rufus, "I feel a kind of delight; there is great sweetness in those verses of yours. I see you are a poet, whatever else you are; and if you'll manage to transport me, properly dressed, to the feet of Silvia, I will listen to you."

"That I can do, but will not as long as you think me a devil."

"Lord!" replied Rufus, familiarized to the soft voice and manner of the Monk, "I was only in joke; — it's all fun here, isn't it?"

"Do you," said the Monk, "believe in purgatory?"

"How well you time your questions!" said Rufus; "I must be hard of belief with a vengeance, if I don't believe in that: — why, my worthy black frock!

I have been in purgatory these two hours."

"Will you in future follow my counsel, if I relieve you from it?"

"And take me dressed to Silvia?"

"Well! I'll throw that into the bargain."

"Agreed."

"Agreed. You are no longer afraid of me?"

"Not at all."

"I am no pioneer of Babylon?"

"No, but a friend in need."

"And the scarlet lady you think is —?"

"Now, come, don't press too hard upon me all at once."

"Well, well! we will talk of her another time: — and now see, here come chairmen with Silvia's page."

Rufus rubbed his hands with joy, "Here, my men, here are the cranks for the poles," cried he to two masks in large chairmen's coats with proper straps and poles, which the masks soon fixed, and began to move. A shout followed him.

"Shout away, shout away! I don't care



that for any of you," cried Rufus, snapping his finger and thumb; "I shall soon be away from your nonsense, and catch me at a masquerade again, that's all! You are a good boy," added he, speaking to the mask who had brought the supposed chairmen, "I won't forget the five shillings — was it five and sixpence?"

Turning into another apartment, followed by a crowd, the chairmen, pretending to be overcome by the weight, rested. No sooner was the cradle lodged on the floor than it began rocking. Rufus in vain darted his head from one side to the other to find his tormentors; away he rolled like a light over-masted ship in a heavy swell. He begged Silvia's boy to make the chairmen beat off the mob. This they did to his great relief.

"Master," said one of the chairmen, "this is warm work; I hope your honour will order us a pot."

"There's no porter to be got here, man; you shall have two pots when you get outside of this volcano."

"Thank your honour; Grady's not without his share of conscience; your

honour can't do more than you can do. Come Phelim, take up."

"His honour," said Phelim, "will be kind enough to settle with us here; its the custom, your honour, on crowded nights, to munerate we your honour's servants more than usual."

"Very well, very well, go on."

"Your honour's a stranger to we, and we hopes no offence in demanding the fare and muneration before we carry you any farther."

"The Lord have mercy on me!" sighed Rufus; "I shall never get out. — I'll pay you when you have set me down."

"We haves no doubt of your honour's honour at all," said Phelim; "but o' masquerade nights there be some of you gentlemen that bilk we all for fun. We must beg to be paid, your honour."

"You may beg long enough and be hanged to you; I have not got on my — my — pockets."

"Sure your honour beant at a loss for a friend to lend you ten or twelve shillings."

"Ten or twelve devils," cried Rufus.

"As to that, you may do as you please; but our fare we will have before we stir, and that's five shillings all but sixpence. You can't be any gentleman, or you would not stand for the muneration with a couple of poor fellows, carrying such a heavy big boy as you."

Rufus, confounded, knew not what to do.

"Shall I go for a police officer?" said Silvia's lad.

"What for? To make a noise here? I have had enough of that; pay them, and have done with them."

"Who, I? Sir! I have no silver about me; shall I go to my lady for some?"

"Are you mad, boy? Not for the world; I have plenty in my purse if I had it here. — Where's Beelzebub? he will lend me a few shillings, to be sure."

The monk had vanished; the chairmen were not to be found. Rufus's patience was now completely exhausted, and, indeed, I now thought it time to release him, and bustled forward in my first dress, with my mask in my hand.

"Where, where have they carried it?" cried I, in seeming agitation and displeasure.

"Here, here, Vernon, this way, my friend Vernon, my dear friend Vernon," called Rufus —

"What folly is this?" said I; "why have you been playing the fool so long in this silly machine, when I know you are expected elsewhere?"

"My dear friend," replied he, "how could you serve me so?"

"Serve you how?" said I —

"To leave me to the mercy of the merciless, of such a crew!"

"You surely could not think I should stay all night by your side — where's Foster, and Lumley, and Aspell?"

"Don't ask me, don't ask me, don't — that's a good fellow — the thought of them's enough to turn my stomach again."

"Again? why, have you been sick?"

"Sick! — but get me into the dressing-room first, and there I'll tell you all."

"I take it extremely ill of them," said

I, "and I shall tell them so — but without them how am I to get you away."

"Make that young chap find out the chairmen, and settle with them what you please."

"I see one of them," said the boy, and running off, returned with the supposed chairmen, who were personated by Crawley and Foster.

"Come along," said I, "in with your poles and follow me."

"Bless Mr. Vernon's honour," said one of them — "Grady knows Mr. Vernon's honour, and would make nothing of following him all the world over, even beyond the sea-side towards Waterford."

"You have been making too free with the bottle, my friend," said I, "take care how you carry this gentleman."

"Never fear, your honour," said Grady, "we'll no more spill him, nor we would the champagne we have been drinking for want of porter."

They fixed the poles, and having taken up the cradle, began to reel about as having drunk too much.

“Steady” cried I, walking by the side of Palmer.

“Steady!” echoed he, adding: “by the Lord, Vernon, they are drunk.”

They tossed him about unmercifully through the crowd, and we made our exit amidst shouts of applause; at the dressing-room I discharged the pretended chairmen, and as soon as he slipped on a dressing gown he began to recount his misfortunes to me, being persuaded that I would not have left him without an indispensable engagement. When he came to the note he had received from Silvia; “do you think,” said he, “that it’s real?”

“I have known such confessions at a masquerade,” replied I, “but I know nothing of Sylvia.” —

“That,” said he, “must be her anonymous name: I guess, but I would not tell even you.”

“If that’s the case,” said I, “I should certainly hear her confession; — there’s no blushing under masks, you know.”

Harry Lumley had engaged a friend of his with whom Rufus was unacquaint-

ed to personate Silvia, and having dressed the lover in a fine yellow satin jacket, I helped him to find his way to the appointed tree, which was a large shrub in a corner of the concert-room. Before I parted with him, I told him it was probable that I should change my disguise, in which case we might make ourselves known to each other by a sign and a bye-word. It was agreed that the word should be *cough*, and the sign a gentle pinch on the arm, which was to be answered by a cough.

Pointing out the tree, and the lady sitting on a bench that could hold two persons, I left him, and in a moment slipped on a domino, which was ready for me. Rufus, approaching the bench, bowed, and bowed, without the slightest return of notice ; at length he went up close. I was not near enough to hear his reception, but I saw Silvia inviting him to sit. The bench was on a swivel, and was safe enough to look at, and also when the supported side had a sufficient weight upon it to balance the other side which had no support under it. I saw

Rufus take the seat, and after a few minutes Silvia rose, when the seat turning on its hinge, down dropped the lover roaring as he fell, and Silvia ran off. He was, however, up in a moment and after her, saying :

“ I’ll know who you are, though.” He followed, sometimes running, sometimes creeping, and Lumley’s friend kept him full half an hour at bo-beep. Passing several persons whom he suspected to be me, he dealt about his pinch and his cough, and was laughed at, and sometimes assailed and abused. At last Silvia suffered herself to be caught.

“ Now, do tell me truly,” said he, “ are you a woman, or not ?”

A crowd gathering, “ Don’t be rude, Sir,” cried Silvia, in an affected voice ; — “ I won’t be followed in this manner. You have already cost me more tears than you are worth.”

“ Upon my soul !” — said Rufus.

“ A pretty fellow,” cried one of the crowd “ to make a woman cry.” —

“ Upon my soul !” repeated Rufus.

“ Soul and body both, gentlemen,” said



Silvia, weeping, — “ he is a betrayer, a deceiver.”

“ Shame! shame!” was echoed to his ear : — “ he deserves to be ducked.”

The idea appalled Rufus, and he addressed the crowd in his defence : — “ I give you my word,” said he, “ I never meant to hurt the lady ; — she wrote me a note, which I have not got about me.”

“ Shame!” cried one, “ to boast of receiving letters from ladies.”

“ Lord have mercy,” cried Rufus, “ you don’t understand me.”

“ Let’s hustle him,” says one.

“ If you do,” says Rufus, holding up his doubled fist, “ I’ll knock the first man down that touches me.”

“ Pray do, do,” said Silvia, “ he deserves it : — I’ll begin first.” The mask elbowed him, and he was sea-sawed by the crowd.

“ Madam!” said he, turning to Silvia, whose mask was now off and disclosed a hard-featured face, with a thick beard, whiskers, and long black eye-brows.

“ Madam! by the Lord!” cried he,

struck with the figure, "I was going to call her Jezebel, but she is nothing better than a Holofernes."

"Cruel, cruel Rufus!" whimpered Silvia.

"Cruel Rufus," was chorussed by the by-standers.

"I see how it is," said he, "this is what you call the humours of a masquerade; — catch me at a masquerade again, that's all," — and off he strode; but before he had got ten steps, he heard himself called: — he stopped and looked towards the quarter whence the sound issued, and waited for a repetition of it.

"Rufus!" this came from an opposite direction. He started round, when his name was repeated in a different place, where he immediately directed his eyes, after a little longer waiting.

"Hah! curse ye! it's all a sham; — all a masquerade from first to last:" — and he went on in hopes of finding me, pinching and coughing as he sought his

way out of the house. So much for Rufus.

With the exception of the Monk, who interested me much, I met with nothing that you may not meet with at every masquerade. A large assortment of the Vortex were, as usual, the chief supporters of the evening. They promenaded, waltzed, courted, made assignments, supped and went away.

Lady Standish, very slightly clad, personated a *Psyché*, and that fop Veramore was *en Cupidon*, neither of them ashamed to show their faces. I occasionally detected Lady Betty near the box where Miss Savilles sat with the Godfreys; but she was so annoyed by the Monk, that she could hardly get an opportunity to speak to her. Rivers was her principal attendant, and I fancy the next elopement in the Vortex will be graced with their names. Mariton and Ajax were both harlequins, and took pleasure in showing their agility all night, principally in playing leap-frog over each other's heads.

I grew tired at last, and went off about four in the morning. Mrs. Godfrey and her cousin retired before supper. It is an amusement the Godfreys do not frequent, and their going last night was to show their Italian cousin an English masquerade. They sat all night in one of the lower boxes, so that I could speak with them at times.

Soon after they went, I missed my monk, whom I intended to pursue at and after supper, in order to discover him, but he escaped me. He knew me, I am certain, from several equivocal allusions he made use of. One speech he made, particularly struck me. In our last rencontre I said to him,

“Remember absolution is the word.”

“Sinner!” said he, “thou shalt be absolved, but it must be upon the usual conditions!”

“Ho, ho!” said I, “there are conditions?”

“Attend,” cried he, “I am called away, and shall see thee no more, either here or in Cold-Bath-fields; but I will

leave my counsel with thee: meditate upon it, and profit. Absolution is the word; — it is the universal doctrine of human nature, and confined to no modes of worship; but nature herself hath established the conditions for obtaining it. If thy crimes sting thee not, there is no hope for thee. If thou hast robbed the orphan, slandered the innocent, deceived thy friend, planted a dagger in the heart of a parent, wilt thou have absolution gratis? If, even in thought, thou hast proposed the seduction of the ignorant maiden, or the virtuous wife, wilt thou have absolution gratis? Thou mayst laugh awhile, but nature's *penance* will overtake thee, perhaps too late — REMORSE: — it is fire in the heart's core, yet sometimes inadequate to guilt — then — no more — beware young man, beware."

As he said this very impressively, he left me; I followed, but could not engage him to stay longer: — he mildly put me away with his hand, in the action of blessing, saying at the same time, "Benedicite!"

Adieu ! my dear Darrell : — I hope I have banished the *Blues*, but I am tired myself.

Ever yours,

L. VERNON.

## LETTER LXIV.

*Augusta to Angelica.*

Hanover Square. March.

**W**HERE is my dear Angelica now? Many hundred miles nearer to her sister, who is travelling with her in imagination and on maps. I have embarked with you, Angelica, at Genoa, and landed at Frejus; I stopped with you a couple of days at Avignon, supposing the very sound of Vaucluse worth at least eight-and-forty hours; and I am at present with you at Lyons. You will soon now be at Paris; and I shall make up my packet to be dispatched immediately, lest you should arrive and not find a letter from me, expressing the joy which yours has given me. I trust that you will be with me in the first week of April. Your arrival is of importance in a point you little think of. There will be a recess of the parliament; George

and Caroline spend it at Woodlee : my father wishes to go and stay at Grove Park. If you are here we will accompany him : if not I shall go with them.

Though we shall be obliged sometimes to part with my cousins, yet we shall be a great deal together, for the distances of our residences are not very great. By leaving Grove Park early, we may dine in town. Woodlee is much nearer still to London. Manor-House is the farthest asunder, but that is little more than a day's journey from town. These thoughts come into my mind from the feeling that brings you nearer to me every day, and I go in imagination with you to every place where you will have a home.

I will now return to the subjects which have so much interested my dear Angelica. — The letter, to which I shall annex this under one cover, contains an account, which has proved so erroneous, that I ought perhaps to destroy it : but, writing, as I do to you, occurrences and sentiments as they arise, I will content myself with removing the impression it might make, rather than not let



you see every thing in my mind as it passes. The pleasure too, my dear Angelica, is great, I own : — I have involuntarily wronged Sir Francis Darrell, and it is a real gratification to do him justice. All the appearances respecting Lady Betty Bramblebear have been cleared up. Mr. Vernon read to George part of a letter from Sir Francis, who had learned from his servants that we had seen her come out of the house. He owned that the shock he felt was the cause of his leaving town, and explained the pains he had taken to convince her of the folly of her conduct. This you may be sure gave us all pleasure ; but to complete it, a circumstance occurred which I must tell you as it happened.

I believe I mentioned in one of my former letters, that there was to be a masquerade at the Opera-House, to which I was going with George and Caroline, merely as spectators, for they take no pleasure in it as an entertainment, and it was principally that I might have an opportunity of comparing it with our Italian carnivals. I have something to say to you of this masquerade, but I must

first surprise you with the unravelling of mysteries which gave me so much pain. On the morning after the masquerade, before I left my dressing-room, Madelena told me that a young lady, whose name was Craven, was below, and wished to speak to me alone. Well remembering the name of the winking man and his sister, to whom I was introduced at Lady Mount-Vernon's ball, I made no scruple of admitting Miss Craven, though I could not imagine the cause of her visit at that time of the day. I had seen little of her at the ball; her being chaperoned by Lady Betty kept us at a distance from each other. What notice I did take of her was in her favour. Her dress and demeanour were modest. I remember making in my mind a comparison between her and some other ladies present, to her advantage; and I should have wondered at her coming to the ball under Lady Betty's protection, had the reason not been explained to me. Her father had been a respectable manufacturer at Peterborough, who had made a large fortune, and brought up his family in affluence.—

He was dead, but her brother was still at the head of the manufactory, which continues a thriving concern. For some years there had been an intimacy between the Cravens and Mr. Bramblebear, who had found it convenient to borrow money of the late Mr. Craven. In proportion as the debt augmented, the intimacy encreased ; and the young ladies were much at Bramblebear Hall, where they saw something of fashionable life : and this winter Mrs. Craven, who was still alive though advanced in years, consented to let her elder daughter see more of that life in a town view, under the care of Lady Betty. Poor woman ! she little knew to whom she was trusting her child.

As Miss Craven entered my room I rose to receive her. — She was in a very elegant morning-dress, and looked very handsome, but serious. Madelena having given her a chair, and left the room, I said I was glad to see her :

“ Though I fear,” continued I, “ from the early hour of your visit, and your asking for me, that you have some unpleasant communication to make.”

"I am not much acquainted," replied she, "with the rules of fashionable life in town, but I know you will excuse my mistakes for the sake of my motive. I may be doing wrong, but I do not mean it if it is so, yet something tells me that I have no right to suppose you so interested about any man, as to excuse the liberty of speaking to you on the occasion which has induced me to come here."

As this young lady was living in the house with Lady Betty, this introduction gave me an idea that she was her confidante, and was about to speak of Sir Francis Darrell. I had a momentary hesitation whether I should allow her to go on or not, till she said :

"But as you are yourself concerned, you will, I am sure, not be displeased with me."

"If I am concerned, my dear Miss Craven," said I, "I shall consider myself under an obligation to you for any information which it may be necessary for me to know. Had it concerned others only, I should have requested to remain ignorant of it."

"I beg you," said she, "to believe that I do not mean to attribute to you any thing but friendship, when I tell you I am purposely come to clear from blame the conduct of a gentleman, of whom you cannot but wish to think well."

"Who is it?" said I.

She replied, "Sir Francis Darrell."

I expected the name, but my pride would not allow me to suffer her to imagine that his conduct was of that importance to me which her visit implied. — I said "that my gratitude to Sir Francis would always induce me to wish him well, but that I had no concern in his conduct."

"Except," said she, "as impertinent people will make it so, as you must have seen by the anonymous note you received."

I was not much astonished at hearing this from Miss Craven's mouth — yet it shocked me to find her acquainted with the circumstance, and I prepared to receive her full communication.

"My dear Miss Craven," said I, "I

must observe that your knowledge of such things is not ——”

“Stay, Miss Saville,” cried she, interrupting me, “and hear before you blame me: — it is disgraceful to Lady Betty, but not to me: — I am at this moment in a situation you little think of; and I fear that my character will be implicated in her shocking conduct.” She here burst into tears.

“Good Heaven!” cried I, surprised, “what is the matter?”

“Lady Betty has not returned since the masquerade last night,” replied she.

“Gracious Heaven!” said I, “I do not wonder at your agitation — but compose yourself, I hope you are not implicated.”

“Oh! no, no, no,” — cried she with increased agitation; “I have seen too much, but I knew nothing of her intending to act in this manner.”

The dear girl could not restrain her tears for some time. I asked if she would allow me to call Mrs. Godfrey.

“Presently,” replied she, “but not yet.”

I took her hand, and begged her not to

be uneasy as to herself. — As she recovered, I asked if she was at the masquerade.

“ No,” replied she, “ I *was* to have gone, and wished it at first, never having been at one ; but Lady Betty’s conversations with me, and her manner of acting for ten days or a fortnight past, determined me not to go ; — indeed I wrote to my mother, to say that I should return home sooner than was intended. The whole of yesterday and the day before, Lady Betty hardly spoke to me, for adhering to my resolution not to go to the masquerade.”

I told her she had acted wisely, and, seeing her composed, I requested she would allow me to introduce her to my cousin.

“ I am sure,” said I, “ she will be happy to show you every attention on this occasion, as well as on your being our neighbour in the country.”

She bowed, and I went for Caroline, whom I prepared to see her by informing her of what had passed. She shook hands with her, and, telling her that I had mentioned the circumstances, added, that

there was a room in the house at her service. She made her acknowledgment very warmly, and said she would accept of it for a day or two, by which time her brother would be ready to take her into the country. Having quite recovered herself, she detailed to us a very sad account of her protectress, excusing the information she gave, by observing that she thought it no breach of the rules of hospitality or of confidence, to speak of a person who had so completely betrayed herself. She said she had long thought Lady Betty rather free in her manners, but supposed it was the effect of innocence, as she was so young a woman. She recollected thinking her too familiar last year with Sir Francis Darrell, before he went abroad, but had no idea that she was a guilty woman. After his return from France, she had met him at Brambear Hall, once or twice, at which times Lady Betty appeared more angry than pleased with him. Some notice, too, had been taken by her brother of her attention to Mr. Veramore, but he was wrong in that particular, for she had shown her



resentment at his impertinence. She and Mr. Bramblebear had always made themselves agreeable to her family, and when they left the country at the end of the autumn, they had engaged Mrs. Craven, to let her come to them in London, after Christmas ; that, upon their arrival from Bath, her brother had brought her up to town, and, having staid to go to Lady Mount-Vernon's ball, had returned to Peterborough.

"I was delighted," continued Miss Craven, "with my reception in Seymour-Street, where Mr. Bramblebear had taken a house for four months : nothing could be kinder ; and the idea of the enjoyment I imagined in the novelty of London gave me great spirits. I was not long, however, with Lady Betty, before she began to give me marks of her confidence that made me uneasy. It is a painful thing to have folly or vice in trust, yet treachery in itself appeared to me so odious, that I should certainly have kept my opinion of Lady Betty, and the circumstances she confided to me, to myself, had *she* thought proper to keep any measures

with the world ; at present, I consider myself as released from every obligation of the kind. She made me her confidante, and would, had I been willing, have made me her associate. The first thing she told me was, that she never would go to live in Yorkshire with Mr. Bramblebear. Her great object for some months past has been to attach Sir Francis Darrell to her. — She failed in this at Bramblebear Hall. She then purposely threw herself in his way at Malvern, and was again disappointed. In town she has written him letters though he did not reply to them. She then was convinced in her own mind, that his conduct was owing to an attachment to you, Miss Saville; and she resolved to injure him in your opinion. The note which you received, signed "*Preserver*," she wrote, and would have had me copy, but I refused, and from that day her regard for me cooled. Lady Mount-Vernon had previously included me in her invitation to her ball, or I imagine I should not have been invited. There you could not but observe her conduct: — she pursued him

to every part of the rooms, and I am persuaded was the cause of his retiring so early."

Here Caroline asked her if it was Lady Betty who pinned the note to my shawl.

"I was not then in her confidence," said Miss Craven, "but there can be no doubt of it. She has lately, by some means, forced Sir Francis to leave town, which, I believe, convinced her that all attempts to attach him would be fruitless, and she has been more successful in attaching a young man of large fortune of the name of Rivers, whom I have met at Bramble-bear hall."

Miss Craven's open and simple manner in relating her connection with Lady Betty and the results of it impressed both Caroline and me with feelings in her favour; and we lamented that she should have been so exposed to the seductions of an unprincipled woman, with whom it was very clear that she was not congenial. She had so completely lost her confidence, that she knew nothing of the lady's last manœuvre in her page's fantastical

clothes ; and, when it was mentioned to her, she said that she must have taken the clothes out and dressed at another house.

How painful is it, my dear Angelica, to reflect, that there are women, on whose conduct the happiness or misery of their families depends, so lost to every better feeling ! Miss Craven having accepted the room Caroline offered her, accompanied us to breakfast, during which my father and George were made acquainted with the cause of her visit. You will believe that they were not much astonished ; but I fear they were not very sorry either. They are so fascinated with Sir Francis Darrell, that every thing that tends to establish or to magnify his character delights them. They are not glad that the lady has misconducted herself, but that *she* has done what *he* could not do — exposed her misconduct, as the exposure has so completely removed every ground of suspicion on a subject that for months past had been considered with pain.

Miss Craven's maid was sent for, and

SIR FRANCIS DARRELL.

her things brought to Hanover-Square, where she remained but two days, for in consequence of her letter to her mother, before she had the least idea of Lady Betty's eloping so soon, Mr. Craven arrived in town to escort her home. Her modesty and good sense endeared her to us, and my cousins pressed her to stay some time longer ; but she said that she could not ; and we were sensible that, with her delicate and just sentiments, she could not have gone into company without great pain, nor, indeed, without some loss of that consideration which she had gained in our minds. She carried with her our esteem and good wishes, and a certainty that we should be happy to see her another time. This young lady's disclosure, my dear Angelica, has given me very great pleasure : it has raised Sir Francis to that high place in my esteem which he deserves, and which, with my grateful feelings towards him, it was very painful to me to withhold — but alas ! I foresee that it leads to reasonings on a subject respecting which my father and cousins think me unrea-

sonable. They must, however, stay at least till I am addressed upon it, before they can repeat their reasonings and their wishes. That will never be : — he whom it concerns has said it will never be; and I will not agitate myself with making resolutions which may never be called for, but I will repeat to my dear Angelica, that I never can be persuaded to unite myself with one whose opinions and mine on the most important topics of life are at variance.

To counterbalance the pleasing subject I have been dwelling upon, I have to tell you that Count Olivastro is in London. He arrived last week : George has received him with great civility ; my father with kindness ; and I with a degree of inward horror that I cannot account for. Whatever I felt, however, I had resolution enough to conceal ; and I made sincerely the kindest enquiries for all his family individually. I do not think him altered in any thing except that his brows are now constantly contracted. Mr. Vernon, whose attentions to him my father requested, tells us

that he expresses pleasure in seeing London; but rather by words than looks. I hope he will not stay long — yet I fear he means to renew his addresses personally, though my father, in reply to one of his letters, assured him that he could not receive him in England, but upon condition of his relinquishing such a fruitless pursuit. I will see him occasionally, but not always when he calls. At all events you will soon be with me now to assist me in conducting myself properly in this point as well as others. His arrival occasioned a remarkable thing which I must not omit to tell you: — When I mentioned to Madelena that he was in London, she turned pale and nearly fainted away. I thought it very extraordinary, but it might be owing to the suddenness of my manner in speaking of it. She is very well and speaks English astonishingly for the time she has been here.

In the beginning of my letter, I told you I had something to say of the masquerade I was at the other night. It is not my intention, my dear Angelica, to give

a detailed account of the entertainment. In this country it is an amusement entirely confined to the rich : — the lower classes of the people have no idea of it : you never see masks in the street as during the carnivals abroad. — The fancy dresses here are magnificent, and often elegant. — Every character and profession afford subjects, and the rooms were crowded : — but in general there was little support of character : the company were divided in dancing or the promenade. I sat in a box so situated, that we could see ; and our friends, by stepping on a bench, might speak with us. I saw Mr. Vernon very busy in amusing himself at the expence of the young man who, I told you, wanted to convert me at Bath ; but what induces me to speak particularly of the masquerade is the conversation of a man who personated a monk. I observed him pass several times, and he always looked at the box. He now and then stopped, raised his hands and said :

“ Benedicite.”

At length he stepped upon a bench,



he: "you are the speediest of all my heretics. — Now for your sins."

"I have sinned," said I, "in listening to you on a subject so out of its place, and I deserve a severe penance."

"Let me see," said he, — "a severe penance! Let it be this; to think seriously *at home*," — he laid a stress on the words *at home*, — "on the points I have proposed to you; should you find them difficult to be subscribed to, I will absolve you for continuing a heretic. But," continued he, altering his voice, which he lowered at the same time, "your remark is just; the subject is not one to be played with, nor was it my —"

He here broke off, and resuming his former tone of voice, addressed Caroline, and said,

"Your sister is wiser than a monk: — she has brought him to a confession: — pray make interest with her to absolve him."

"Sin no more," said I, "and you are absolved."

are to believe that none of your friends, be they ever so good, will escape everlasting punishment, if they do not think as I do. Benedicite—I shall leave you to reflect on these points, and I expect on my return to find you ready to confess, and to believe in a punishment so just and merciful together—Benedicite.”

He went down as he said this, and walked about at no great distance from the box, seldom addressing any one, but often looking our way:—at times he went into another room. I thought it extraordinary that he should have pitched upon me to convert; and of course I would not give him an idea of my own sentiments, particularly as I saw his object was quite the reverse of what he pretended. Caroline was also struck with the singularity of the circumstance. After some time he returned to his former station at the column.

“Are you ready to confess?” said he.

“I am, father,” replied I.

“You shall be no nun, then,” cried

point has disturbed me a good deal : — it kept me awake the night of the masquerade for a considerable time after I was in bed ; and it every now and then occurs to me always with great pain. It is a point on which I cannot reason, and I will try to banish it for the present from my thoughts, as my dear Caroline tells me she is uneasy at catching me frequently in a reverie.

I made another observation at the masquerade, which gave me some uneasiness. I noticed a mask in a black domino, who, for the greater part of the night, paraded the floor backwards and forwards, for ten or twelve paces on each side of our box, generally with his arms folded, sometimes farther off, sometimes nearer. He came close, when any person got upon the bench to speak to us, particularly the monk. I thought him a madman. We were soon tired of the confused scene, and constant motion before our eyes, and we came away very early. I will now dispatch my packet : it will be in Paris before you. You will, probably, be there long enough to receive

another letter from me. I will write the moment I hear from you. Adieu! my dearest sister,

Your most affectionate

AUGUSTA.

P. S. I hope you have Mr. Dartford safe: if so, remember me to him, — but I do not mean to try to supplant you. Remember all the family to him. George and Caroline send remembrances also to Mr. and Mrs. Dorrington and Miss Dorrington.

## LETTER LXV.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Mr. Vernon.*

Belmont.

MY DEAR VERNON,

I KNOW your estimate of friendship, and I do not scruple saying, come to me on receiving this; postpone your pleasures, and hasten to partake of the agony of your friend, who, in spite of his better resolutions, in spite of his trust in Providence, is sinking beneath the weight of reflections which embrace the past, the present, and the future. When I left London to avoid that unhappy woman, who, I find, has now completed her disgrace, I resolved to bring my fever to a crisis, and abide the issue. I mixed a determination never to think of marriage, with a delirious hope that I might be tranquil, after exposing my unclosed wounds to be probed by her, who alone has power to administer the balm that

I have, indeed, brought  
but I shall perish under

ed upon the execution of the  
which I mentioned to you, I or-  
the deed of gift to be drawn up  
solicitor; and I waited till I could  
plete the execution of it before I  
entured on the act I meditated in the  
disclosure of my heart. Impatient at the  
delay, I hurried to town last week, and,  
having to wait till the next day for the  
deed, I went to the masquerade. I was  
your friend the monk — but keep this to  
yourself. On my return, the day after, to  
Belmont with the deed of gift properly  
executed, a fit of irresolution overtook  
me. For a whole day I made fruitless  
efforts to recover myself, and your letter  
arrived to postpone the dreaded act for  
another day. At first, in the state I was  
in, I could not read it; but, persevering,  
it engaged my attention, and, though I  
did not enjoy it as I should have done  
at another time, it postponed the crisis  
another day. At length, it is done. All  
yesterday and to-day my heart has been

convulsed, and I suspect the malady will reach my brain.

- 5 You have sometimes seen the urn in the bower at Grove Park, and then it passed with you as a fancy, and no more. I afterwards mentioned it to you at an agitated moment, when I related my unexpected interview with Miss Saville in that bower, and you will recollect the circumstances sufficiently to know that it was connected with the horrors of my life. I had not courage enough at the time to tear my wounds open before you. Love has emboldened my heart, but the act has recoiled upon it; and all the little hope fancy has been fighting for against the occasional attacks of memory is gone; my nerves are unstrung, and I know not what is to become of me. In addition to what you already know, I must tell you that I had consigned my wretched story to a small chest inserted in the pedestal to the urn. I have, at times, to heighten my remorse, visited this chest and viewed its contents, but have never dared to read the memorial of it, which I wrote soon after the events it

recounts. The memorial has never been seen by any eye, but mine, on this globe ; the events too are unknown, but they are recorded in Heaven. I hope it is also recorded how they have shaken my soul on earth. Yesterday morning I went over to Grove Park ; I opened the pedestal, and brought the chest away with me. I prayed for strength, and received it. I unlocked the chest, and drew my manuscript from its case. I spent the day in meditating upon it, in humbling myself, in tears, in prayers. I slept little during the night :—to-day I have written some reflections upon it, and my intention is to send the manuscript with these reflections to Mr. Godfrey, to be communicated to Miss Saville, to whom I mean also to write a candid statement of my mind, assuring her of my determination never to marry, and imploring her to assist me in soothing my repentance by accepting the gift I have made. The exertions of my mind have shook my frame : I wish you with me for a day, and to make you the bearer of my packet to Godfrey. Come, then, and see the



wounds of your friend open, and say if they can ever be closed : — say if it be not a horrible presumption in me to dare to love such a woman ; say if there lie not between us a frightful chasm, impossible to be passed ; say — if it were even as you insist, that she loves me — oh ! what a thought ! — say whether I ought not, even then, and the more, to fly her for ever. Come soon, my dear Vernon. Would I could sleep — think not I am going to say *for ever* ; that impiety is over, thank God ! no, but — till you come, for thought is torture.

Your affectionate friend,

F. DARRELL.

## LETTER LXVI.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Mr. Godfrey.*

Belmont. March.

MY DEAR MR. GODFREY,

Our friend Vernon is the bearer of a packet which I have addressed to you, but it is equally meant for Mr. Saville, who, I hope will also consider this letter in the same light. I beg you both to forgive me for the pain I am about to give you, and for whatever may strike you as presumptuous or unnecessary in the enclosed to Miss Saville, which I leave open for your consideration. I have no right to make her unhappy, and I shall acquiesce in your determination if you shall judge it wrong to disturb her mind with my afflictions. I beg you too

to remember that I have been induced to the disclosure of those afflictions, and of the sentiments of my heart, by the unparalleled kindness and friendship which you have all bestowed upon me, and the unspeakable advantages I have derived from them.

Vernon will tell you the sad state of my mind; how I am combating with my feelings, and how resolved I am to conquer them. Till I do succeed, I cannot again see Miss Saville. Be assured I will not willingly give her a moment's pain. You know her value, and you will not be surprised that I have been able to estimate it. Did not my wretched story render me conscious how unworthy I am of her, how inadmissible as the suitor of her hand, I should not have thought of such requests as I have made to her in my letter. Had my heart been untainted, its sentiments should have been poured out in a different language, and I should have besought her acceptance of it with the utmost ardour. This I know to be out of the question, and so will you when you have read my manuscript. The

wretchedness I endured from reflection has been doubled since I have discovered that there exists on earth a happiness to which I dare not aspire ; a happiness like yours, my dear friend ; a happiness which must be his with whom Miss Saville consents to be united. It cannot be mine ; but she is good, she is kind ; and if Mr. Saville does not oppose it, which I trust he will not, I hope she will not refuse me the only earthly comfort I can now enjoy—that of her accepting the gift which Mr. Vernon brings. Pray let no false delicacy deprive me of such comfort. There is but one argument which may be used against me, and that I will do away. It may be said that the gift of a lover may be viewed with jealousy, but my love shall be like the love of beings in another sphere. I will absent myself ; and whatever may be attributed to me, to her can only be ascribed friendship and goodness. Persuade her to the acceptance I beseech you ; it will soften my hours of expiation, when I reflect upon the mind that will have the disposal of those means which

exceed my wants, and even my power of attending to the wants of others.

Now, my friends, read my story — first by yourselves. My wish is, that Miss Saville may know it; — I own it is the chief motive of my sending it. If it is communicated to her, let her read it before the letter I have addressed to her. When she knows all, let her judge me: I hope she will pity — I fear she will abhor me: but, in any case, I cannot bear to live unknown. I will not have her esteem, while I suspect she would think abhorrence my due. Conceive what I am suffering when you read this, and pity

Your attached friend,

F. DARRELL.

*[The following Fragment is a Copy of the  
Manuscript sent by Mr. Vernon.]*

### THE THREE DAYS.

#### *A Fragment.*

\* \* \* \* \* HE was one of those beings whom Nature seems to curtail of gall. With hardly enough of that bitter juice to perform the functions of his animal frame, none of it was ever carried in the course of his blood to his heart. It was a heart of great feeling — it partook of joy and of sorrow in no common degree; it impelled him to acts of kindness. Revenge, even resentment, suspicion, malignity of every kind were unknown to it. Forgiveness in him was not the dictate of duty; it was an inherent quality of his mind. He repelled wrong, if there were time to prevent it, and admonished the

wrong-doer ; yet enmity, even to an injurer, he felt not. But of injury he seldom had to complain ; inoffensive, and standing in no man's way, even detraction spared him. His predominant passions, perhaps his only ones, were love, joy, and sorrow. The last he had twice suffered to an excess, which had nearly sent him to the grave. The first time was on the unmerited cooling, and withdrawing of affection by a man whom he tenderly loved. When he perceived his friend's neglect, Harvey examined his heart to discover what he had done, or omitted, to produce this estrangement. "If I have done wrong," thought he, "I will repair it.—friendship cannot suddenly cool in its affection without a cause. My friend must not be lost, he must and shall love me still, as I love him." He searched his heart in vain for his fault ; he looked not for it in his friend's. "Well, then," said he to himself, "I will regain him by encrease of kindness and assiduity." The unsuspecting Harvey had pitched upon the very worst expedient for the attainment of his object.

His kindness and assiduity were now irksome ; for his friend, in consequence of a very unexpected event which had altered his feelings and his views, was become absorbed in pursuits and gratifications, which he knew the plain sense of Harvey would condemn. The sensitive heart of the latter beat irregularly and heavily for some time ; but, after a while, it was comforted by the affection of a worthy and amiable wife, who convinced him of the folly of sorrowing for a loss which he had neither caused nor merited.

His second great sorrow was the loss of that wife, who died while yet in the prime of life, leaving him the father of a child, whose resemblance to her mother served at first to heighten his grief, though in time it encreased his resignation. Other misfortunes, however great, are simple evils : — the loss of a woman, whose good sense helps to support all other evils, and whose affection softens their rigour and consoles the heart, is a compound evil of such magnitude, that the man who persuades himself that he had found



such a one, sinks under it. Where now was she who taught him that a false friend was never a friend worth preserving? Who dressed and who healed the wound that false friend had made? Who now shall dress and heal the wound which death has inflicted? Who shall comfort, who shall console poor Harvey for the loss of such a wife? Who tell him how to bear the evil? Who soften it by bearing it with him? Sorrow found his heart without defence, without ally; it took possession and enthroned itself there. Harvey grew sick and listless, and would have died, had not the forlorn state of his young Matilda awakened the feelings of a father, and called upon him not to desert her.

Matilda was yet a child : she had not attained her fourteenth year. Handsome and innocent, and sadly attentive to the duties of a daughter, she could not, she did not, fail to engage the notice of her afflicted father; that notice was the means of recalling him to life from which he was perceptibly sliding. He noticed the silent, affectionate assiduities of his

daughter. The chord was struck by nature ; it vibrated to his heart : — sorrow, though not soon banished, was shaken from its throne, and paternal love took possession of it.

Matilda was indeed handsome and innocent, but knew not that she was either the one or the other. She partook much of her father's character, and had been more trained to virtue, than warned of vice, by her mother : — her innocence was ignorance, combined with a natural disposition to goodness. Like her father, she meant no harm, and she suspected none. Like her mother, she attended to domestic duties, and did all in her power to comfort her father.

They lived at the skirt of a small town. Harvey had received a good education, and, in point of fortune, had seen better days ; but, much reduced in circumstances, he was obliged to have recourse to some profitable exertion. Having sufficient skill in the art of drawing, he had established himself as a drawing-master, and had obtained practice enough to maintain him and his daughter with a

degree of ease ; yet they kept but one servant. Matilda, affecting no pretension to a condition superior to that which her father appeared in, dressed simply but neatly, and assisted in the lighter parts of the care and service required in a family. Though young, she was competent to the management, having been trained to it by her mother from her infancy. Her father had taught her to draw ; but, her situation requiring it, her needle was more handled than her pencil. She had few associates, but she was remarked by those who knew her for a singleness of heart and candour, that gained affection : all the little attentions and endearments of life were unstudied and natural to her. Harvey's relish of his earthly existence was restored by the repeated sounds that reached his ears of "What an amiable child is your Matilda !" Joy shared the throne of love in his heart. He recovered his health ; he pursued his avocation unremittingly, with a view of amassing a little dowry for her by the time she became marriageable.

The town in which they lived was -

pleasantly situated on a fine river :—their house was small, but it had the advantage of standing insulated in a pretty garden that ran down to the bank of the river, from which was seen at a short distance up the stream an ancient magnificent castle on the opposite bank. On the same side with their house stood a fine Gothic building devoted to the uses of a public school. Harvey's premises originally consisted of a couple of cottages on a piece of neglected ground, which he had observed to be capable of great improvement. He obtained it on lease at a small rent, and his taste soon gave it a beautiful appearance which attracted admiration. The tenement containing more apartments than were necessary for him and Matilda, he had agreed to receive one of the tutors of the college, who, he knew was paying his addresses to a young lady, whose family resided near the town.

Under the care of this gentleman there was a boy, soft by nature, with a capacity formed for learning, and a desire to take advantage of it. He was heir to a large

fortune ; his mother was then alive, and, by the advice of the trustees of his father's will, she consented, though not very willingly, to give him a public education under the superintendence of a private tutor. This gentleman was himself but young ; yet his learning and character had just obtained him the situation of an under-master at the college. His views were a scholastic establishment auxiliary to the college, and promotion in the church : but means were wanting to the immediate commencement of his plan ; nor was the fortune of the lady he courted likely to supply them : time and patience were, therefore, requisite to the attainment of his wishes. Being acquainted with Harvey, he knew that he could spare him room, and he also prevailed upon him to board himself and his pupil. Agreeably situated, he spent his time in discharging his duty at the college, in assisting the boy in studying the tasks which were set him at the school, and in attentions to the lady who had gained his affections.

His pupil had been tenderly reared,

and carefully defended from the contagion of corruption; he was still but a child, in the commencing years of boyhood; he was fifteen; he had never been to school, but now, from the privacy of innocence, he was about to be plunged at once hap-hazard into the broad and turbulent stream of public education. The eye of a private tutor gave a hope, that the more injurious effects of promiscuous intercourse with companions of various natures, and more worldly knowledge, might be averted or counteracted: nor was advice wanting. Delmont, this was the name of the boy, was much longer preserved than most others by the strength which his nature had acquired, and by the friendly admonitions of his tutor. He passed the greater portion of his first year uncontaminated; it was as happy as it was unsullied: he was a devourer of learning; languages, and their stores of knowledge, were the charm of his youthful existence, and he learned much more rapidly than he could be taught. When he had done his tasks for the school, and had listened to his tutor, he explained

his lessons to Matilda, and versified for her in English what he had been set to compose in Latin. The boys of the school wondered at his turn, but admired, and let him go on in his own way. Nor was he at a loss for a play-mate. Matilda trundled a hoop as well as he, used the skipping-rope as gracefully, though not so actively, ran as swiftly, and struck the shuttlecock as unerringly. Till towards the end of the first year, cricket, and quoits, and fives, had not the attractions of his milder sports. He felt for Matilda the affection of a play-mate, he treated her as such, and sometimes told her he wished she were a boy, that they might ride together—an exercise which he took with his tutor, and of which he was very fond. Matilda had a similar childish affection for Delmont, which she showed by all the little endearments that mark the love of a sister for a brother. She attended to the keeping of his clothes in order, to the arrangement of the room in which he studied, to all the little 'nothings which neither he nor his tutor would probably think of, but which ne-

vertheless enter into the idea of comfort.

One day, as he was returning from the school, a big boy playfully seized him by the collar, saying :

“ Come, come along with me and play cricket ; — don’t be such a mol-coddle.”

Delmont, with a jirk, liberated his collar from the gripe of the stripling, and ran home. The jirk, in freeing him had cost him the buttons on the collar of his shirt, which the hand of his school-mate had grasped together with his waistcoat. He found Matilda, as usual, alone in the parlour.

“ See, Matty,” said he, “ what Ruff-head has done,” and he showed her the dismantled state of his collar. “ Now, I am obliged to go and change my shirt.”

“ No,” said Matilda, “ you need not do that — I have a paper of buttons, and will sew one or two on in a minute.”

While she was doing so, she asked him how it happened.

“ He wanted me to go and play crick-



et, and seized me before I was aware," replied Delmont, "calling me a mol-cod-dle."

"How foolish," said Matilda; "pray don't mind what any of the school-boys say:—they are harum-scarum creatures, and want to make you as wild as themselves. There — now the buttons are on."

"Thank you Matilda," said Delmont, "I believe I ought to kiss you for being so kind."

"Pooh!" cried she, "it is not worth it."

"I will though," replied he, "if you will let me."

They kissed:—the kiss was mutual, and sweet, and as innocent as sweet, and the sweetness and the innocence of it long remained untainted: neither of them thought it a favour; neither of them thought of repeating it.

Some time after, — alas! it was towards the conclusion of that portion of life, when the union of happiness with unspotted honour was to be dissolved, — the same big boy again threw himself in his way and said —

"Stop a moment, Delmont, I am not going to hold you — I give you credit for your studying; we all see that you fag at your books, and, without flattery, your themes are allowed in general to be the very best in the school; — but don't tell me that a boy of your talents, with the knowledge he gets from Ovid, and Virgil, and Horace, and Homer, and no doubt you read Suetonius and Anacreon too, to say nothing of downright English, can pass his whole time in reading and composing. Don't I know there's a pretty girl always at your elbow?"

Delmont awoke as if from a sleep: a new train of ideas poured in upon him: — he looked confused, and said she was a very good girl, without exactly knowing what he meant by goodness.

"You be hanged," cried Ruffhead; "who said she was not good? She is all the better in my opinion."

Delmont, still confused, declared that he did not understand what he meant by "being all the better."

"Go along," cried he, "you are a

hypocrite : — will you tell me that you never kissed her ?”

For the first time in his life, — some say it was also the last, — Delmont blushed.

“ A confession,” cried Ruffhead, “ a clear confession !”

“ I don’t know what you mean,” said Delmont, and walked away.

He proceeded but slowly: the business of the school, the theme, was forgotten ; his head was full of other thoughts, but they were confused, and he knew not how to arrange them. He had not blushed when he kissed Matilda two months before. When asked the question, he could not deny it ; — but why was the question asked ? Why did he feel averse at the confession of it ? Why blush then ? The causes were in the look and in the manner of his questioner, of his new instructor, but he was not then sufficiently experienced to trace them there. He prolonged his walk, — he was almost afraid to go into the house. If Ruffhead’s question supposed something wrong, he had no such consciousness ; — yet as he had blushed now, it was a proof that he

had done unknowingly what ought to be blushed for. He had neither done, nor thought wrong in respect to Matilda : if he had, would not her father and his tutor notice it, and tell him of it ? It was true he had kissed her ; but he would have done the same to a sister, or any child who had done him a kindness ; and where in itself was the harm of a kiss ; what could possibly be in Ruffhead's imagination ?" These were the thoughts that passed in Delmont's head ; and they agitated his heart.

The endeavouring to trace Ruffhead's imagination kept the figure of Matilda alive in his own, which unfortunately repeated to him the long-forgotten kiss. He felt his heart beat at the image ; the pulsation informed him that there was more than he understood, and he guessed that there might be some connection unknown to him between a kiss and female honour. He took a very uncommon resolution, — that of consulting his tutor on the subject. He did — but without the slightest allusion to Matilda. —

His tutor laughed kindly, and put an abrupt conclusion to the enquiry.

“ My dear boy,” said he, “ stick to your Greek and Latin : — it is not yet time for you to be making enquiries of this nature. As you grow into manhood you will be settling yourself in life ; till then I advise you to think only of your studies ; but meanwhile I see no reason to make the supposition which has come into your head. — By-the-bye, how came it into your head ?”

Delmont, who was aware of the academic crime of inculcating a big boy, evaded the question, by repeating some line from Ovid, which he had been reading since the tutoring of Ruffhead. The infusion of the knowledge that his tutor advised him to delay was already begun, by the charge which had called forth his first blush ; was illustrated daily by the new intelligence with which he read his classics ; and was completed by his intercourse with his enlightened school-fellow. When he first saw Matilda, after parting with Ruffhead, it was not with his usual ease that he spoke to her, but her frank-

ness restored it. On the other hand his frankness had received a check which she observed ; and she often asked the cause of his not speaking as much and as freely as usual.

Delmont was now himself grown a big boy : — this but made him the more agreeable to the unsuspecting Harvey : his understanding was ripening, and his knowledge extending ; and he was pleased with his taste for drawing, of which he took lessons from him. He saw no danger to his child, from this good and sensible boy. He pursued his business for the greater part of the day abroad, and at home nothing appeared that could give him pain, or raise apprehension ; on the contrary, happiness and innocence adorned his cottage : — Delmont's tutor thought so too, and he continued to indulge with the chosen of his heart those visions, which he had admonished his pupil to postpone.

It is unnecessary to trace further the steps of corruption. With Ruffhead Delmont made other friends : their society became daily more pleasant to him :

they were lively and acute, and anticipated knowledge of every kind. His heart however was never open to them. There was one indeed with whom he felt considerable congeniality of taste. They were in the same class, and took pleasure in each other's compositions and repetitions. Their chief association however was at the school, or in going to or from it. They seldom met at their apartments. When Delmont resolved to mix with the scholars more than he had done, he felt it a misfortune that the only one, for whom he had a preference, was about to leave the school, for their congeniality was ripening into friendship. Seized with a military rage in contemplating the exploits of the British troops in the Peninsula, that friend's ardour for the classics only fomented his desire of serving under the great captain, whom chance was driving on to the pacification of the world; and his relations indulged him in his wish. The others, by whom Delmont was now attracted, were lads growing into men, who piqued themselves on comprehending the abstruse reasoning of the

modern philosophical works, which they privately studied, and by which they were convinced that every thing existing was the effect of chance, that existence terminated with life, and that the laws which regulated the social world were arbitrary and unnatural. However repugnant at first the heart of Delmont to these opinions, after studying them, he began to take a pride in the power of his understanding to defeat arguments, which he attributed to the weak impulses of wishing, and of a fond attachment to protracted existence, against the laws of nature.

With these philosophical principles, Delmont was initiated into a full knowledge of all that his tutor was desirous to have had reserved till the maturity of his mind and person should render the knowledge agreeable to nature, and no way dangerous. He did not, however, satisfy his mind; he was puzzled by his reflections; and he could not, as he was taught, consider Matilda as his natural prey. He scrupled not, however, to find some occasion of repeating his kiss, which she



returned as before, unaffected, and cordially. She knew no difference between this and the former one—Oh! what a difference did *he* feel. It was *he*, not the poor Matilda, who had eaten of the tree of knowledge; it was *he* who had listened to the devil; but it was *she* who was to be sacrificed for the unresisting, weak, unthinking, prostration of the man—the boy. She was still a child, an innocent child, and loved, purely loved, the being whose new-raised passions soon became irresistible, and in an evil hour bore down his better affections. Tutored as he was, he knew he had done wrong. She too knew she had done wrong, but was little aware of the extent of her folly.

“We have done wrong, Delmont,” said she to him, “but we may retrieve ourselves:—I will tell my father, and you shall marry me.”

He convinced her that he would not be allowed to marry, and that secrecy for the present was their only hope.

Time rolled on; and, with caution, the inebriation of the impassioned boy and the simple-minded Matilda passed unnoticed.

At length a circumstance took place, which produced a great alteration in the comprehension, and in the happiness of the unfortunate Matilda. There was a young man, a friend of Delmont's tutor, who frequently came to the house. — He saw, he liked, at last he loved this pretty, open-hearted, attentive, engaging girl. He had good prospects in the church, and his present income, though small, was adequate to comfort. He told his friend his opinion of Harvey's daughter, and that he wished to win her affection : — his friend consulted Harvey, and the equally simple-minded father proposed the lover to his daughter for a husband. She was now turned sixteen, grown handsomer, and possessed an indescribable engaging manner from her attentions to others being not acquired by imitation, but a quality of her nature.

Poor Matilda ! the sounds of lover and husband from her father's lips gave an unexpected shock to her heart, and awakened reflection not natural to her. She had never been taught to reflect : — all her actions, all her sentiments, all her

endearing manner, were the result of impulses,—the impulses of a good and amiable nature. She always meant to act right, and therefore did not conceive that she could act wrong. She did not reason on her conduct: she saw that she pleased, and, collecting from that that she was right, she was happy; but reflection now came to convince her that impulse was not the proper source of virtue, or of love, and consequently not that of happiness. The mention of a husband opened her eyes, and she saw that she was lost.

Sorrow was her first emotion: shame she knew not yet; that was to come. Equally unacquainted with the nature of the human frame as with the operations of the mind, she was at a loss to account for some sensations and symptoms, which she had never before experienced; yet she was not so completely ignorant as not to have some woeful suspicion that she was in a state that could not long be concealed. The first secret workings of shame began to operate upon her mind: she knew that if such

was the case, it was one which all the virtuous were agreed in stamping with disgrace.

The anxiety to obtain some precise knowledge of this suggested the first artful expedient that had ever entered her too unsuspicious, too innocent mind, and, as has been said of her seducer's blush, it was the last. A poor woman had lately been delivered in a neighbouring cottage: Matilda, who had before sent her some assistance, resolved to go and talk with her. She took her some refreshment herself, and stated her doubts, and made her enquiries so artfully, that in spite of the beating of her heart as she proceeded, and her torture-bent-brows, she obtained the complete certainty of the dreaded truth, without betraying that she was personally concerned. Not content with ascertaining this sufficiently oppressive fact, she sifted the poor woman's thoughts upon the moral heinousness and disgrace of it. All she heard tended to give shame its most horrid aspect, and to drive her to desperation.

On returning home, she was going into her own room for privacy, but Delmont, who was alone in the house, on hearing her come in, ran down to meet her. She turned into the parlour. He flew towards her to embrace her. Before he approached near enough to touch her, he suddenly stopped and gazed at her with terror. She had done nothing, said nothing to arrest his purposed embrace; but not a step more could he advance: his feet were rivetted to the floor, as if by enchantment. She stood before him erect, motionless, and firm: her arms were folded over her breast; — her eyes glared on him; — her lips quivered as if whispering; her brows were raised in agony of despair, not bent in anger: — it was a look of desperation and of madness.

“Matilda!” cried he, hoping to bring her to herself. —

“Well!” said she, in a loftier tone than was usual on her voice.

“My dear Matilda,” said he, “I was coming to kiss you.”

“And what prevents you?”

Delmont advanced a step : — Matilda, unchanging in every other respect, suddenly sunk the uplifted brow of despair, and bent it into two deeply lowering arches ; her eye-balls still glaring on him, her lips still quivering as if she whispered. He was terrified : — he ran for a glass of water, and, falling on his knees, begged her to take it. At that moment she fetched a deep sigh ; her features suddenly fell as it were into their natural position, and she put out her hand for the water. With the change of countenance, she lost the firmness of her posture ; and her hand trembled in receiving the glass : — he assisted in raising it to her lips. The irritable part of her frame had undergone a violent struggle, and a convulsion-fit would probably have been the immediate result, had not Delmont's terrified appearance, and his momentary absence brought her to herself. The agitation had been caused by the sight of him so soon after the confirmation which she had acquired of her forlorn state, and while she was contemplating its consequences.

She was standing near a chair : she sat down after drinking the water. Seeing her now more composed, Delmont would have pursued his purpose of embracing her. He offered to take her hand. She repelled his mildly — still without speaking.

“ My dear Matilda,” said Delmont, in a supplicating tone, “ I beseech you to recover yourself — what is the matter ? what has happened ? ”

She answered not, but her eyes were fixt upon his face ; yet they bespoke no attention to their apparent object : their outward vision was suspended ; — it was occupied internally. Again he called upon her name : — she heard him not : — he seized her hand now unresisting — it was inanimate. The fit was coming on again ; — he shook her, he knelt, he kissed her hand, he besought her to relieve him. The motion which he gave to her frame again recalled her to her senses, and she said in a low under-voice :

“ Pray let me go to my room.”

She now allowed him to assist her.

He raised her from the chair : the agitation had left her feeble. She slowly tottered across the room, he supporting her by the arm. He opened the door ; they reached the staircase ; she raised her foot and placed it on the first step : in the attempt to draw up the other foot, her exertion failed, the suspended fit returned, and she fell in strong convulsions upon the floor of the passage.

The conscience-struck Delmont viewed the horror with double emotion, for her and for himself. There was at that early period of his life a tenderness in his nature, which would make him writhe at the sufferings of others ; — and here the sufferer was Matilda, the charmer of his boy-hood : — what did he not feel for her ? What did he not feel for himself ? He was the cause of her suffering, the destroyer of her innocence, perhaps, her murderer ! All his better feelings revived in his heart, but with them entered that worst of fiends, that bitterest foe of peace, that cancer of the heart, Remorse. He cursed himself, he cursed



his friend, he cursed the world, he cursed — no, he denied a God.

There is another passion, which in the female breast rivals remorse, exceeds it in agony, and defies even death. That passion had suddenly, without the slightest warning, darted like a vulture on the tender, undefended, truth-dismayed heart of the lost Matilda. Shame had grasped it with both its talons, the piercing points of which met in the core. She could not endure the sight of her father, whom she loved most tenderly, nor that of the man who had thought her worthy of being made his wife; above all, she could not endure the sight of Delmont.

When Harvey, as usual, returned to dinner, he learned from the servant what had happened. He found his daughter in bed, and apparently asleep. At the beginning of the convulsion-fit, the maid had run for the apothecary, while Delmont exerted himself as well as he could to prevent her hurting herself. After the fit had spent itself, she was conveyed to her room, and the maid

directed to see that she was kept quiet. Harvey looked at her with tears in his eyes, but spoke not to her : — he eagerly required of the maid some account of the cause of the disorder. She had no account to give : — she had run on hearing her fall, to see what was the matter, and found her in convulsions in the passage. Harvey sat down on a chair at his daughter's bed-side : the maid left the room to attend to her business. Silence, a dead silence prevailed, while the anxious father watched for the first indication of his child's waking, that he might comfort her, tell her how he loved her, and bid her be well. He watched in vain : her closed eye was sealed by a tyrant more powerful than sleep, as despotic as death. Harvey received the summons to dinner, but moved not : — he was bound to his seat by a chain stronger than adamant. The profound, unbroken silence continued, and the day ended, and night darkened the room, and Harvey watched, and Matilda's eyes remained closed.

During those solemn, awful hours,

Delmont was alone : — it happened that his tutor went early into the country to fulfil an engagement. Poignant feelings, but of a different nature, tortured his breast : — his dinner was carried away untouched. The servant begged him to eat.

“ How can I eat ? ” he said, “ while Matilda is in danger ? ”

“ Do you love her so well then ? ” said the maid.

He was at first startled by the question, but, perceiving no covered meaning, he answered,

“ How can I but love a person with whom I have lived like a brother for more than two years. ”

He passed the rest of the day, sometimes in his little study sitting at his table, his head supported by his arm, sometimes in the parlour walking to and fro, sometimes at the foot of the staircase, listening. At that time Delmont was not the abandoned wretch he afterwards became. In spite of his new associates, he had never brought himself to think that Matilda was the frail and foolish

girl who might be duped for amusement, and deserted without injury, which was the general principle laid down among them in their appreciation of female honour; and he had so much still of his own honour left, that as he strolled about the room, or listened at the staircase, he meditated the only reparation that could, if any could, be made. But that reparation he knew he was restrained from making by the laws of his country. He resolved, however, if she recovered, or if she would see him again, to make it the subject of comfort to her, by a solemn promise of effecting it the moment it was in his power. These may be called virtuous emotions, but they were foolish and impotent, and like all other virtue, imaginary.

In the evening, the apothecary returned to see his patient. He had been able to obtain but little information from Matilda respecting her ailment:—he saw no danger from the convulsions, and did not seek any uncommon cause for them:—he quieted Harvey by assuring him that it was very common for girls

to be attacked by them ; — the only fear was that of their becoming habitual, against which care must be taken : — quiet, exercise, and cheerfulness, were the best antidotes. Harvey, though he could not break away from his daughter's bed-side for a meal, was in the parlour in a moment when he heard there was a person there who could speak decidedly on her state. Delmont was there too, but not so easily quieted, for he traced Matilda's disorder beyond the limits of the medical art ; but to know that she was not in immediate danger was some relief to him.

Though Harvey's mind was made comparatively easy by the doctor, he could not account for her long sleep ; but this his comforter attributed partly to exhaustion, and partly to the medicine he had administered. The feelings of the father were thus reduced to a state of calm.

Not so Matilda's : she too was more in the secret of her malady, than he who undertook to cure it. She heard him announced ; she knew she must see him.

During her apparent torpor, she had been forming resolutions, and fortifying her mind to look even at her father, whose fate his silent watching at her bed-side fully foreboded. Her tears had been slowly and silently flowing during those hours. She took the opportunity of his absence to raise herself, and give way to them. She dried her eyes, and for her father's sake resolved to appear better. The comforted Harvey, though from the shade of the room he could not well see her, heard her speak and was happy. A message from her in the morning, assuring him she was better and should rise in the course of the forenoon, gave him spirits, and he went out to his ordinary avocation.

Delmont's self-restraint could hold out no longer. He desired the maid to beg her to let him see her but for a moment.

"Sir," said the servant, "you don't know what you ask."

He had evidently forgotten himself, yet could hardly forbear urging the request.

"Tell her then," said he, "what I

have said, and it will show that I think of her."

The maid complied, and brought him for answer, that she should be extremely hurt if he attempted to see her up stairs ; but, if he went as usual to his class, he should see her on his return in the parlour. This appeased the violence of his impatience, and he submitted.

Matilda had risen. She had even walked out. Delmont found her sitting in the parlour. She looked well ; but as he entered, she put her hand to her forehead, and pressed her temples to abate the pulse of those arteries : the hand served, at the same time, as a screen between her eyes and Delmont. As he went forward with a smile, she said,

" Pray, softly —"

He recollected his former horror, and stood still.

" Sit, I beg you," added she ; " I will speak to you presently."

" My dear Matilda !" cried he ; she waved her hand, and repeated :

" I will speak to you presently."

Poor Matilda had more in her mind

than it could well hold, and little did Delmont imagine its contents. She was endeavouring to arrange the disclosure of them when he came in : his entering confused her. She found it difficult to reduce her thoughts to method ; and, indeed, a slight degree of insanity had already taken place in her brain. She could not speak till a fresh shower of tears came to her relief. He seized her hand ; — she allowed him to hold it, and, looking at him through her tears, she said, without using his name :

“ Will you answer me truly a question which I shall put to you, whether it be for or against you ? ”

“ Most truly,” said Delmont.

“ Tell me then, and mind that it be most truly, for more depends upon the truth of your reply than you are aware of — Were you, or were you not previously conscious of the shame to which I should be brought ? ”

Confounded at the question, and again alarmed for her senses, Delmont hesitated.

“ Speak ! ” cried she.



"Matilda," said he, and again hesitated.

"Speak," said she, in a more decided tone.

The horror-struck boy dropped her hand; and, clasping his own hands together, gazed at her, but spoke not.

"You have said enough," cried she.

"I have not spoken," exclaimed he.

"Yes, and most truly too; — but this sinking. I shall again sink; — my medicine, my medicine."

"Where is it?" cried he.

She pointed to the chimney-piece, and said, "Pour it into that cup."

It was a beautiful china breakfast-cup, which he himself had made her a present of: — the medicine stood by it. In haste to prevent the sinking that threatened her, he noticed not the cup, but, pouring the contents of the bottle into it, presented it to her lip.

"I thank you, I thank you," said she: "I shall now soon be well."

A pause ensued: — he replaced the empty cup on the chimney-piece. She gazed at him as he went, and as he re-

turned. He stood before her; — he caught her eye; an unusual electric fire seemed to dart from it; an unnatural smile rested on her cheek.

“Had you unknowingly brought me to shame,” said she, “I would have pitied, I would have spared you. I was with a woman yesterday, who told me the story of a man who murdered the girl he had seduced, in order to spare her shame and his own. He was a kind, a generous seducer. — Would you be less generous? Would you have me meet shame, that is worse than death?”

“Matilda,” cried Delmont, “I am no seducer; I was myself seduced by my passions. I beseech you not to talk of death. You are innocent, and if I am not, I may, I will, in time, make the reparation due to your innocence: a few years hence it will be in my power; — when I am of age, my hand and fortune shall be yours.”

Delmont, whose nature, it has been seen, was originally tender and good, now felt keenly, as he witnessed the agony of heart which the knowledge of

her state produced in the woman he had injured, and whose innocent character, not vice, had occasioned her delusion. He looked at the ruin he had caused, and he was sincere in the intention he expressed. This proof of penitence softened the growing harshness of her feelings towards his acknowledged crime.

“ Poor boy !” said she, “ your virtues are your own ; your vices are contracted. I wish I had spared you this last wound, that must rankle in your heart while you live — but, no ; I recall my wish. Suffering will heal it ; you must suffer.”

Delmont now thought her wild ; he besought her to be composed, and to talk more kindly, and more intelligibly.

“ I will,” said Matilda. “ Sit down and hear me.”

She then, with some degree of order, gave him a detailed account of her feelings on the proposal of a husband to her, of her suspicions respecting her own state, of the means by which she had convinced herself, of the conversation with the poor woman on the loss of innocence and the shame attending it, of its

effect upon her, part of which he too well knew, of her situation in the room with her father at her bed-side, whom she had not dared to look at, "and whom," said she, as she concluded her detail, "I never more will face."

Delmont listened, appalled, to a succession of horrors arising out of an action, which, however grey-beards and professional preachers might denominate vice, had been settled with his new friends, to be the natural and general practice throughout the world. He now saw the injury in another point of view, as to the effect it had in preventing her marriage, as to the still more dreadful effect of making her a mother out of wedlock. Thus far he saw how greatly he had been her enemy: he saw not yet that he was her — murderer! — and, therefore, when she said she would never see her father's face again, he once more assured her that she should be his wife, and urged her in the mean time to adopt some mode of concealment of her situation.

Matilda, the child Matilda, awakened

to the full sense of shame, had resolved on death, which was less intolerable to her thoughts. Her resolution being taken, she determined to awe the guilty boy, in a manner which he alone should know. His sorrow, his agitation, his offering all the reparation in his power, had shaken her resolution; and, though she could not recall the act, she meant to soften it, by the omission of the severe blow she had determined to strike; but when the thought of his suffering being the best means of atoning for his guilt, and for recovering peace of mind occurred to her, she resumed her first determination of leaving a regenerating awe impressed upon his heart. She fixed her eyes upon him.

"Delmont," said she, "the man whom that poor woman talked of was a generous lover: — you, I thank you, Delmont, are not less so."

"Oh! talk not in this frenzied manner," cried he, "I beseech you."

"Listen. — He brought his mistress to shame, but he saved her the horrid

feeling." Matilda gently drew herself up into an attitude of horror, as she added, — "he murdered her."

"Great God!" cried Delmont, "you have lost your senses."

"No," said she, "I am not out of my senses. I know what I am saying; you, Delmont, have been an equally generous lover."

As she uttered this, she carried her eyes to the cup, which he had handed to her: his followed, and were fixed upon it by hers: — he trembled, — he anticipated, — he already knew what was to follow.

"Generous boy!" continued she, "you have wiped away my shame. I shall not feel it. — Yes — you are right, — that cup, your first gift, contained your last."

If individual suffering could atone for guilt, Delmont's was already half atoned, as he heard these words. He gazed at the speaker; — he fell upon his knees, — he clasped his hands.

"Oh!" cried he, as he wrung them; "recall those words; say they were meant to terrify, to punish me, but say,

say they are not true ; — the terror, the punishment, is more than I can bear.”

She was affected by his agitation — she felt for him : he had been more guilty than she had hoped to find him, but his suffering at the moment, and that which she foresaw would embitter his life, excited her compassion, and she forgave him from the bottom of her heart.

“ Rise, unhappy boy,” said she, “ rise and come hither.”

“ Say then that the ingredients of the cup —”

“ Come hither, and hear what I have to say.”

She put out her hand : he rose and took it into his, which she pressed as she wept.

“ I forgive you, Delmont,” said she, “ with all my heart.”

“ But unsay those words,” cried he, unable and unwilling to believe them.

She moved her hand to withdraw it from his, but he detained it : — a look disengaged it.

“ Be comforted,” said Matilda, “ and take care that your agitation does not

betray you. Be comforted, if the postponement of my death can comfort you —”

“ Oh !” cried he, “ I live, I live, I live.”

He sprang unexpectedly forward, pressed her to his heart, and exclaimed that she should be his wife. Matilda wept.

“ No,” said she, “ I cannot be your wife ; and my resolution is fixt : I cannot, will not live.”

“ You shall, you shall ; I will this day ask your father’s leave to consider you as mine.”

Poor Matilda ! even the pang of shame was not more acute than was this woe-timed kindness. She continued weeping.

“ I know not what God will do with me ; but I know that there is no peace on earth for me. I hope he will forgive me, for he is good.”

“ Good !” muttered Delmont, whose mind was at that time opening to the secrets and miseries of philosophical necessity.



"And I will pray," continued she, "with my last breath, that he may forgive you, the only person I have to forgive on earth; for every body has been kind to me, and I have injured nobody, except my poor father, who does not know it."

Matilda bit her lip, as if in pain, and rose; the poison she had swallowed had begun its work; she resolved to spare Delmont the horror of seeing her die, and, if possible, to conceal the cause of her death. She told him that the medicine she had taken was to compose her; that she was going to lie down, and hoped it would have the effect.

"Don't be alarmed at present," said she. "If you wish me well, your agitation will not make me so. I have one favour to ask of you: I cannot bear the thought of seeing my father to-day; will you assist me in preventing it?"

"Tell me how."

"By watching for his return, and making it a request from me that I should be left quiet this afternoon."

"He will think that extraordinary."

"I cannot, and will not see him to-day; it must be prevented. I will write a note, giving him some reasons as an excuse — will you deliver it?"

"I will."

"Thank you, thank you."

The note was already written; it was such a one as Delmont might read without alarm; the excuses were common and unsatisfactory; but, to please her, he undertook her commission without making an objection. He saw not, as he looked over while she read the note, the index at the bottom of it, directing attention to the next page. She folded it, and put it into his hand. Again she bit her lip — again she looked at him through her tears: — her heart was full; she had but an hour to live: — with all that heart she forgave him: — its tenderness, its original tenderness towards him revived. The taking leave of him was a trial which had nearly betrayed her.

"Poor boy!" said she, holding out her hand to him, — "Do you remember our first kiss?"

"Yes, Matilda."

“The remembrance of that kiss is sweet,” said she. “Forget the rest, and in the hope that God will forgive them; take another like the first.”

She drew him towards her; she kissed him. The kiss was as innocent, but not as sweet: — this was given in sorrow — that in gladness of heart.

She pressed his hand once more, and said, “Good bye!”

He walked with her to the foot of the stairs where she had fallen the day before.

“Shall I see you again,” said he, as she went up.

She answered, “I hope so.”

He meant on earth: Matilda meant in heaven. She looked at him for the last time, and went into her room.

\* \* \* \* \*

Ye rulers of destiny! ye angels of heaven! where were ye when Matilda died? Powers and dominions! where were ye? Unbounded source, Universal Dispenser of good! where wast thou

when Matilda died? Ye subordinate ministers of good! could ye not be on earth and in heaven at the same time? Tell me not of such cramped, such unaccomplished deities. I'll have none of you.

\* \* \* \*

Delmont, relying on the composing virtue of the medicine which Matilda had taken, and still more on the equivocal hope of seeing her again, passed the hours that intervened till the return of Harvey, with considerable calm. Not that he was easy; he foresaw wretchedness enough from the new light in which the unhappy child viewed their intercourse; but his feelings had been tost from life to death, from death to life, in a tempest of passions, which had subsided, and his fears were allayed.

Harvey arrived, received his daughter's note, and, to the amazement of Delmont, flew to her chamber. Nearly an hour elapsed before he was heard or seen again, except when the servant, going

up to remind him of time, saw him leaning over the bed, and did not disturb him. Delmont's tutor, actuated by a kind apprehension, tapped gently at the door. Receiving no answer, he opened it, and went in. Harvey was still bending over the lifeless body of his daughter. Delmont, who had followed his tutor, stood at the door.

"Harvey!" said the tutor, in a low voice. Harvey spoke not. Delmont's prepared fears took alarm—he rather flew than ran for the apothecary. His tutor conceived it best to retire. Ignorant of the fact, he left Harvey exploring death in the features of his child. Delmont, no longer sufficiently master of himself to attend to the cool dictates of propriety, allowed the apothecary no halt, and almost dragged him up to Matilda's chamber. As he entered with him, he observed Harvey hastily quit the bed-side, and seize upon a letter which he put into his pocket; he then turned to Delmont, and said,

"Sir, this is no place for you."

Delmont withdrew; but as he shut

the door, distinctly heard him say,  
" Doctor, my child has just expired in  
convulsions."

\* \* \* \* \*

The heart of man beats slow or quick,  
as driven more or less powerfully by  
the passions of his horrid nature; but  
time moves on with even pace. Matilda's  
remains were deposited in the church-  
yard. The doctor was convinced, or  
seemed to be so, that the death of Har-  
vey's daughter was natural; and he con-  
vinced all enquirers that it was so; and  
though there was afterwards some talk  
of the suddenness of it, none went so far  
as to think of a violent death. These  
were but two persons in life to whom the  
truth was known; and of these two one  
was aware that it was known to the other,  
and one believed that the knowledge of  
it was confined to himself. The death-  
struck Harvey was the former, the  
wretched Delmont the latter. The feel-  
ings manifested on the occasion by a  
father were easily accounted for, but the

extreme violence of those of an unconnected school-boy was thought surprising. Some gave him credit for exquisite sensibility; others, less charitable, attributed it to an unwarrantable passion — but, whatever was the cause, his tutor was seriously alarmed. At the time of the funeral Delmont was confined to his bed, and talked so wildly, that he was thought delirious.

He was nearly a fortnight before he came down stairs, and then his studies were neglected; he ate little, spoke little, never smiled, never joined the other boys. But his behaviour to Harvey was the most unaccountable circumstance. He had not seen him since he had heard him utter those dreadful words: "My child has just expired in convulsions." He no sooner cast his eye upon him than he saw the double murder he had committed. Harvey's countenance was changed; it was completely fallen; the march of death was visible in every feature. His eye, in spite of its mournful resignation, darted envenomed stings into the heart of Delmont, who, when it

was turned upon him, instantly averted his own. He could not endure to meet it. And he could hardly look at him without meeting it, for Harvey's eye incessantly surveyed him. "Does he know me? Does he know the fact?" would Delmont sometimes say to himself. "If he does, would he have spared me so long? Would he sit at the same table—be in the same room with me? He *cannot* know it—yet why keep his eye eternally fixed upon me? Does not the look speak the word, murderer? No, the few words he says to me are mild:—it is my own consciousness, and that is even worse than the certainty of his knowing it. Would I were dead! Life is hell, and death is peace."

His tutor expostulated with him on his conduct, awakened him to a sense of the posthumous injury he might do Matilda's reputation, and reminded him that the time approached when he should remove to prosecute his studies in one of the universities. All was in vain. — Matilda's grave, Matilda shrouded, haunted him in his dreams nightly:—her father's eye



pierced his heart daily :— he had no peace by day, no rest by night. His tutor determined to remove him ; he had been long enough excused attending the school, and it was necessary to rouse him. “ To make the removal you wish,” thought Delmont, “ you must teach me how to leave reflection and feeling behind.”

The removal was at all events determined upon. The day before it was to take place Delmont’s wretched feelings were wrought to an increased excess of agony by the too intelligible eye of Harvey. It was never off him :— it never ceased saying “ Matilda ! Give me my Matilda ! ”

In the afternoon Delmont’s tutor was gone out ; Harvey remained at home :— he had not followed his employment since the death of Matilda. Delmont was in the garden. Tired of his existence, he was meditating on the example which had been set him by a girl of his own age, when he saw Harvey coming towards him. The wretched father could not have looked more like death itself

had he come from his grave. As he came near, Delmont perceived a ghastly smile upon his face. He put out his hand. Delmont wished the earth would open and swallow him : — what was to follow ?

“ Let us shake hands, Mr. Delmont,” said he.

Delmont took the offered hand : — it was already a cold, hard, and inanimate substance, which the rest of his body was soon to be. He involuntarily dropped it, conceiving at the moment that it was a premeditated reproach.

“ What,” cried he, “ do you mean, Sir ?”

“ Let us shake hands, Mr. Delmont,” replied Harvey. “ We are going to part : I am not very well this afternoon, and am going to bed ; I shall not see you to-morrow. — I merely wish to shake hands, and to say, that I hope you will do well, and that you shall have my prayers.”

“ Oh ! God ! God ! this is too much !” exclaimed the agonized Delmont : “ what

is it you mean? what is it you know?  
and what do you charge me with?"

"I mean a charitable farewell: I know more than I wish to speak; and I charge you with nothing."

"Harvey," said Delmont, looking at him with dread, remorse, and pity, "you are ill."

"Sir," said Harvey, "I am dying."

"This is too much," cried the frenzied Delmont: "I will die first; I deserve death, not you. There," added he, drawing a pistol from his pocket, and offering it, "There, take it, and take the vengeance due. — I destroyed your daughter — I murdered her — I murder you."

"I have no vengeance to take," said Harvey, mildly.

"No!" cried Delmont: "then I'll take it for you."

He turned the pistol to his head and fired it; and he would now have been at rest, instead of partaking the horrors of his paltry race, but for the malignant charity, the barbarian forgiveness, of the

meek and humble-minded Harvey, whose dying hand had life enough remaining to strike aside the instrument of death, and of peace.

"Rash, rash young man," cried Harvey; "is this the way to atone for any fault you have committed? Live, and I forgive you: it is on condition that you live that Matilda forgives you. I did not mean to tell you what I know, but you have yourself disclosed it; promise me not to attempt your life, and I will endeavour to lighten the burden that oppresses you."

Delmont threw himself in desperation on his knees at the feet of Harvey, and hung upon him.

"Live, repent, and you will be forgiven," said Harvey: "God is good."

"Good!" exclaimed the wretched boy, starting up, "Where is there any good? Where is there any God? Why repentance? Why forgiveness? What goodness is there in wretchedness? Why create a nature of crime and misery? If there is such a place as heaven, will Matilda find there any angel purer than her-

self? Why then shame, and agony, and death?"

"I am sorry for you," said Harvey: "this error is worse, is more fatal than your first; but I have not strength to argue with you: — would to God I could set you an example more powerful than words! I die resigned — I die with hope. I am exhausted," continued he, "and must leave you. Here are some papers I meant to give you when — a few days hence — but you are going, and I shall see you no more. — Take them, therefore, now, and may the impression they make be favourable to your peace on earth, and to your salvation hereafter."

Delmont, amazed and stupefied, received the papers.

"Farewell!" said Harvey: "it is indeed incomprehensible; but, rely upon it, it will be explained hereafter."

Delmont was dumb: he stared at the object before him as in a dream, in which he imagined he saw the spectre of Matilda's father gliding away, after having summoned him to the gates of Death. Harvey stopped not till he reached the chamber

in which he had slept since the funeral of Matilda. In her chamber and in her bed had he passed his miserable nights, sometimes in broken sleep, and oftener in watching — and there he died.

\* \* \* \* \*

Behold, ye pious sinners, ye clingers to miserable existence, ye fond hoppers of life patched to life, ye adorers of mystery! behold your scheme of benevolent creation, of lovely nature, of wisdom unspeakable! wisdom and benevolence, that sent Matilda to her grave to punish a boy; that wasted her father to a spectre, and kept him dying piece-meal a month, for what? to punish a boy. — Brilliant scheme! that packs in the same case genius and folly, virtue and vice, good and bad, joy and sorrow, hope and despair, love and hate, under the name of MAN — what an amusing automaton for the celestials!

\* \* \* \* \*

The papers which Harvey gave to Delmont, consisted of the note he had himself delivered, and a letter from Matilda to her father, accompanied by one from himself addressed to Delmont. The note, as already observed, consisted of unsatisfactory excuses, and was a mere cover to the request added on the following page, that on his return, he would, alone and without notice to any one, come to her chamber, and, if he found her not awake, look in the drawer of her table for a letter, which she begged he would open quite alone.

## THE LETTER.

MY DEAR FATHER,

ON your presence of mind I rely for your granting the favour I am going to request. Resolve before you read any farther, for my sake, for your own sake, and I will add, for God's and our Saviour's sake, to have patience to read to the end of my letter before you speak or go out of the room. I am going to tell you the nature of my illness, and I write it, because I should never be able to speak it to you. Do not come to the bed to speak to me till you finish reading this letter.

Oh! my dear father, my illness is a dreadful one, and one that I cannot bear, nor can you; and this is the worst of it to me. I can hardly bring myself to



tell it. What shall I say? Perhaps you already guess it. I lost my dear mother too soon, and I never was sufficiently warned of the danger of ignorance, or instructed in the consequences of neglecting a holy ceremony, which is of such importance to virtue and to religion. My catechism I learned by rote, and the sermons I heard preached I understood still less. I never felt an inclination to do wrong: and I relied upon that for all that I imagined was virtuous. When I had listened to the wishes of one for whom I had a great affection, something told me I had done wrong, but little did I think I had brought myself and my father to utter shame. It was not till you proposed a husband to me that I suspected I had committed a crime of the most shocking nature, one that rendered a woman incapable of being a virtuous wife.

Thinking again and again upon your proposal, a new thought came into my mind, which made me suspect that I was in a situation forbidden by the Almighty to unmarried women, and impossible to

be concealed. My anxiety for information was very great. I could not ask you for it. I was afraid to ask any body else. I fell upon a plan which gained it without giving any suspicion of my reasons for enquiring. — I prepared a number of questions, and went to see poor Grace Hutchins, who was lately brought to bed. — Oh! my dear father, what a day was yesterday to my heart! A very few of my questions sufficed as a text for the good woman. — I was too soon instructed in more than was necessary for me to know : — and the accounts she gave me of lost young women, of deceit, of dissimulation, of madness, of murder — the pictures she drew of shame involving the parents of vicious girls, raised such a fire in my heart that I thought I should go mad. I endeavoured to lessen the pain I felt, by persuading myself that I was not vicious — nor am I, my dear father ; no, indeed I am not — but I am worse. I am no longer ignorant of the nature of the crime I have committed. I know the value of the virtue I have lost : I have

now learned how indispensable it is to the order God has established for mankind, how necessary it is to the happiness of that state which you have proposed to me. I am not vicious—but I find that I have committed a crime that destroys one of the peculiar distinctions which the Almighty has been pleased to bestow upon mankind, — LOVE — parental and conjugal love. What crime can be greater? what more deserve the shame that attends it?

Far from wishing to defend myself, my dear father, I am overburdened with shame. I shall be known for a lost creature. I shall be talked of and pointed at as a wicked creature. I shall break your heart, my dear father. — Oh! I am so ashamed I cannot see you again. I never, never, can.

After this confession, you may perhaps expect me to mention the person who is the cause of my unhappy state. — Oh! that I could prevail upon you not even to guess who it is. I do think he was

as little aware as myself of the crime we were committing : — why involve him, then ? And even if he was aware of it — oh ! let him escape, to repent and be happy. His feelings, I fear, will betray him to you : if so, say to him, if he lives and repents, I forgive him.

And now, my dear father, comes the request I am going to make : — patience and submission : — your excellent nature is meek, resigned, and forgiving : exert it now, for my sake, I implore you. I know my shame would break your heart, but recollect that God is not the world — recollect that he will forgive it, and that the world knows nothing of it. He will forgive it for my sorrow, and for our Saviour's sake ; and let it comfort you to think that when I die you will have a child in Heaven. Shame will in this manner be avoided, if the world continues to know nothing of it : — strengthen your heart then, my dear father, certain that it is known only to God, yourself, and one other person besides, who will not discover it for his own sake, and

who has too good a heart to injure the reputation of a poor girl.

I hope your heart is now strengthened, is now prepared for the conclusion of my letter. I have prayed fervently to God to enable me to state these things in such a manner to you as to strengthen, as to prepare you for knowing that it is his gracious will to take me away from shame, and that when you read this He will have removed me to Heaven through the mediation of our Saviour. Now, now, be careful, I beseech you, or I shall still be your shame, and your heart will yet be broken. Oh! Sir! Oh! my father! love me still — and for my sake let my ——— let it be attributed to the sudden return of the convulsions I had yesterday. You must, I know, be unhappy, but not so unhappy as you would have been to see me in shame; reflect on this; it is the less evil — reflect too that I am removed by the God of mercy from a state of misery to one of bliss. And be assured, my dear father, that, if I could persuade myself you would bear this unexpected blow as I wish, the tears I have

shed in taking my resolution would not now dim my eyes as I write, and I should be happy. Reflect, too, that I may see you in the state into which I am going, and that your resignation may augment my happiness there : — reflect that I shall be with my dear mother, and with her I will pray to be allowed to be your guardian angel. Think that I am so, as you read this, and you will not have lost

Your affectionate, your now happy

MATILDA.

*Harvey's Letter to Delmont.*

SIR,

I HAVE neither strength of body nor power of mind sufficient to write such a letter as ought to accompany the inclosed. I give it to you with a sincere hope, that it may have a proper effect upon you, not from a desire to punish you. That you are the person alluded to in it there cannot be a doubt. You are at the commencement of life, and consequently too young to lose hope of excellence of every kind. If the reflection which the letter ought to inspire leads you to devote the years before you to the service of God and your fellow-creatures, this first fatal error will be completely wiped away.

I do not mean to write you a lecture : — Nature has endowed you with superior faculties : — You have but to make a proper use of those to attain all that is

desirable on earth, and the approbation of your Maker; for, notwithstanding the fatal effects to me of the crime you have committed, you are still but a boy, and your pardon is already prepared in Heaven, as well as granted on earth. What I chiefly write to you for is to make an observation respecting the last mistaken action of my dear child. She was naturally a sensible creature, but her conduct, both with respect to you and the dreadful means she took to escape from *shame*, proves that nature, even the best, is not to be trusted to itself—that it ought to be instructed and put under the guidance of Religion. My error was a too great reliance on her evident good sense and virtuous disposition, and a fear of rendering her less innocent by premature knowledge. I have paid dearly for my error, nor can I well trace this dispensation of Providence as to its termination in this world; and it therefore confirms my belief that there is another. It may, too, have some unknown connection and influence on the part assigned to you, in



the existence you have received, and but lately received. — Whatever it be, His will be done !

But I was going to make an observation on the last action of my child. — I should indeed be miserable did I not firmly believe, were I not sure, that she was as ignorant of the last crime she committed as of the first. Had she been taught to consider life as only bestowed upon her for the purpose of preparing a spirit for a higher sphere, and not to be terminated according to the influence of her feelings, she would never have quitted her duty. She would rather have borne even shame ; and she would have laboured properly to retrieve the favour of God and man, and I would have helped her. But she erred, and I am comforted by an inward conviction that she has received mercy for this error too, and that she is, as she says, in Heaven.

And now, Sir, may God forgive you, and may your future actions in life render you worthy of his favour !

ROBERT HARVEY.

*The First Day.*

"Let him escape, repent, and be happy!" said Delmont, repeating the words in Matilda's letter, as he looked at the beautiful china-cup in his hand, which he had brought away with him from Harvey's house. "Let me see," continued he, "let him escape, repent, and be happy:" would it not be better to escape altogether, than escape to repent? yes, it shall be so: — there is no escape for me, except from life: — Matilda has escaped. Death — death is the establisher of peace: — the grave is the sanctuary of peace; and thou," he added, addressing the cup, "art the lovely, inviting vehicle of peace."

These effusions of a perturbed spirit broke from Delmont's lips the morning after he had removed to his new apartment, while lingering alone at the breakfast-table, having just drank his tea out of the cup which he had fatally handed to Matilda. He had read the letters Harvey had put into his hands, with a

different spirit from that which Harvey supposed they would produce. The common remarks of a superstitious man and uninformed girl, which they contained, could make little impression on the invigorated understanding of one who had now begun to reason like a man; but the images they raised called forth in him the most tempestuous passions of the human breast. Matilda in convulsions, Matilda taking the poison from his hand, Matilda dead in the room where he had intruded himself, Matilda in her coffin, were the recurring visions of his brain; and at other times he thought of Harvey reading the letter, bending over the lifeless body of his daughter, eyeing him with his fixed intelligible gaze; he thought of his clayey hand, his ghastly smile, his spectre-gliding form, and, worst of all, of the resignation, the meekness, the forgiveness which his sunken cheeks and pale lips had seemed to force horribly upon him. His distracted imagination allowed him no breathing time, asleep or awake his existence was agony, and he resolved to get rid of it. "To-

“to-morrow it ends,” said he : “ to-morrow will I share the repose of Matilda.”

Having prepared himself for the execution of his design, he took his breakfast as usual with his tutor. This was the day he had fixed upon for annihilating all sensation, and he called it the *first* day of repose. Again alone, he took the destined vial from his pocket, and poured the contents into Matilda’s cup ; then drank it off, with a laugh, repeating the paraphrase of a sentiment in Sophocles :

“ Count o’er the joys thine hours have seen,  
Count o’er thy days from anguish free,  
And know, whatever thou hast been,  
’Tis something better not to be.”

Delmont was missing at the school—his tutor came to his apartment to enquire for him, and was informed that he complained of a head-ach, and was gone to lie down. Satisfied with this, he returned to his business. Delmont was missing at the dinner hour : his tutor went to his chamber, and found him in his bed asleep ; he strove to wake him, and could not.

Not knowing what to think, uneasy at the fruitlessness of his efforts, and not without a rising fear from his late observations on his pupil, he hastened to a druggist by whom he was occasionally served with medicine, and asked if Delmont had been there. The druggist took him into his parlour.

"Sir," said he, "there is something extraordinary in this young gentleman's deportment: my men have for some time been talking together of his appearance, and of his muttering to himself as he walks along; besides there are odd stories going about respecting Harvey and his daughter; you had better be upon your guard."

"Gracious Heaven!" cried Delmont's tutor, "can he have poisoned himself?"

"I am sure," said the druggist, "that he meant to do it, but for the present you may be easy:—he asked for a vial of laudanum for you:—had not my suspicion been previously raised, I might have given it—but what I gave him will prove only a strong opiate:—he will sleep for many hours—perhaps till to-morrow

morning, but you had better be with him at the time of his waking."

---

*The Second Day.*

The lecture was given with impressive kindness, and heard with due submission. Delmont, who always spoke with respect and regard to his tutor, owned that he was very unhappy, but owned no more. His tutor, finding that he could no longer be responsible for his charge, secretly determined to write without delay to Delmont's mother; and Delmont, finding his agony encreased by the detection of his purpose, secretly determined to persist in his resolution not to live.

"Well," said he to Matilda's cup, on the *second* day, "you have deceived me, I will trust to you no more: — had you been as unfaithful to your mistress, I might have been less miserable. They think they have foiled me: they have only

thwarted me : — there are other aids to peace; and this then shall be the *first* day of repose."

He started from his chair, left the house, passed the Gothic building where he should have joined the other scholars, crossed the bridge that led to the castle, and was soon upon the terrace of it, the parapet of which surmounted a wall built at the edge of a rocky precipice of immeasurable depth.

"Who shall foil me now?" cried he, as he approached the parapet. He placed his hand upon it; — he looked over the steep; he turned and looked round him; he saw no creature stirring; a dead silence reigned:

"Now, who shall foil me? Now, if there be a God, let him show himself; let him foil the being who defies him." — He again placed his hand upon the parapet —

\* \* \* \* There are, in the progress of time and coincidence of circumstances, accidents perpetually happening that in themselves are nothing, but which in combination with peculiar facts produce effects,

which, however evidently arising from chance, the vulgar and the superstitious ascribe to what they call Providence. — Now, placed as Delmont was, a precipice before him, his hand upon the parapet, no creature nigh to prevent his leap, denying and defying God to foil his purpose — what was to postpone his fate? — Chance, the merest chance : — an unperceived iron-claw which stuck in the wall caught his foot as he made the spring that was to render that day the *first* of his repose : — he sprang with such violence, that the re-action tripped him up; and he fell backwards upon his head, which, struck against a large stone, and he was stunned, and lay stretched on the ground, as senseless as he would have been had he plunged to the depth on the other side of the parapet. Coming to himself, he was extremely surprised to feel a hand examining whether he was materially hurt or not. It was the centinel, who, unseen in his box, had observed all Delmont's motions : — he roused him, and, having got him upon his legs, conducted him by the arm to the steps of the ter-



race, where he told him to go about his business, and not to come there again.

As he walked towards the bridge, he met his tutor, who joined him, having been informed by one of the boys that he had passed the school, and was gone towards the castle. He left him no more that day by himself, and when they parted at night, he hoped that his reasoning and kindness throughout the day had had their intended effect upon his pupil.

---

### *The Third Day.*

"'Tis odd!" said Delmont, as he again contemplated the beautiful gift which he had made to Matilda, in their days of childish ignorance and peace. — "Thy mistress's father would say: 'God is good: — his providence has saved you twice;' and his daughter would add 'live, repent, and be happy.' — Tell me, Matilda, how: — rise from your grave, but for a

moment, and tell me how. Repent I do, — if sorrow for your fate, if remorse for the part I had in it, be repentance : but life ! but happiness ! — tell me how I can endure the one, or ever hope the other. Life and happiness are incongruous terms : — life is the soil of misery ; — happiness is a fancy-coined phrase to signify the visions of insanity : — misery is real ; happiness imaginary : — the happy are madmen peeping at raree-shows : — the man in his senses sees things as they are, and knows that chance has thrown together combustible atoms into his shape, damned with sensation, flaming occasionally, and left to burn out of themselves in time. — And what is wisdom but the art of allaying the torture of the aggregated fire ? Then what is the height of wisdom ? Resolution to extinguish it at once.”

Delmont kissed the cup : — the kiss excited a recollected tenderness : — tears made their way to his eyes : — some fell in.

“ Oh ! I would fill thee full of them,” cried he ; “ and drink them afterwards, could they recall Matilda. — Recall ! ”

exclaimed he, recollecting himself; "recall her from everlasting peace to the hell of existence! No, Matilda, sleep on. Delmont shall sleep to-day: — this is the *first* day of his repose."

When Delmont mused thus, he had not fully decided on the means of accomplishing his inflexible purpose. He was still prepossessed with the idea of throwing his congregated atoms into the air, to be again at the disposal of chance. He bent his steps towards the bridge which led to the castle; but, as he came in sight of the Gothic building, he caught a glimpse of Ruffhead coming out. He turned down a narrow lane to avoid him. Absorbed in his thoughts, he continued the path; — he passed over a green, and found himself standing on the bank of the river, the castle before him. He viewed with wonder the height from which he would have fallen. He stood some minutes reflecting on the repeated accidents which had hitherto frustrated his seemingly unpreventable design.

"What would Harvey with his Providence say now? Is it Providence that

guides my steps to the friendly element which smiles at me, and ensures my repose? How deep and placid does it move along! Smooth as love, silent as time! How cool it looks! Chance, that composed me of burning matter, has led me here to quench the fire, and thus —" He plunged forward,

"What's that?" cried he, amazed and agitated, as he fell backwards into the arms of Ruffhead.

"Hollo! Delmont! What the devil are you about? Are you going to drown yourself?" exclaimed his school-fellow, as he pulled him backwards by the coat.

Ruffhead had perceived Delmont turn down the lane, and had no doubt that he did it to avoid him.

"Come," said he to one of his cronies, "let us follow him, and force him to come among us."

They hastened after him; — he had got to the green before they were near enough to speak to him. His folded arms and pensive gait at first amused them; and they agreed by signs to creep

close to him unheard, and to surprise him. Ruffhead was at his back, and was wantonly disposed to push him into the river, but was restrained by recollecting its depth at that spot. He had no idea that chance had sent him there to drag his companion back to loathed life.

\* \* \* \* \*

Thrice had the premeditated eternal repose of Delmont been averted by the evident effects of chance; — but so close, and in such order, one after the other, that he was free to own that such a succession of accidents towards the same point was extraordinary; and he then recollected a fourth attempt to rid himself of agony, though more actuated by passion, and less unaccountable than the others — that which Harvey's dying hand had foiled.

“But what are three or four extraordinary incidents compared to the surprizing combinations and infinity of concomitances-necessary to innumerable produc-

tions of chance ! To say nothing of the world and its physical attractions and cohesions, its affinities, its repellants, and seminal properties, is there a condition or character in what is called the moral state of things, that does not require an association and a succession of accidents to make it what it is ? Great statesmen, great generals, great scholars, kings, rulers, nay, in the petty affairs of a people, the underlings of society, all to take their places, must owe them to a variety of circumstances, tending to one point. Why then wonder that the pistol, the poison, the precipice, and the stream were concurrent to the effect of a man's remaining in life after three impotent essays to die, made in three successive days ? Chance, indeed, though it can have no meaning, is a most powerful agent. Who knows what it may produce in me ? It seems, however, blindly operating my continuance in life. I will take Ruffhead's advice ; I will live, and, instead of seeking oblivion in death, I will find it in revelry : — my senses shall be no more the vehicles of agony but of plea-

sure:—imagination shall combine its airy creations for my sport. I will plunge into the crowd, and be a happy worldling. Chance will have it so."

This was the soliloquy of Delmont in the evening of the third day, which was spent in company with his new friends, whose acute philosophical discussions, gaiety, and wit, dissipated the gloom which had presented to his imagination death as the only resource worthy of thought. The next morning he put Matilda's cup aside in a place of safety, and drank his tea from a common bason: he spoke in a livelier tone to his tutor; and after the school business he sought his companions of his own accord. But neither Ruff-head nor any of the others with whom he now mixed, were really congenial with him. Amid their scenes of gaiety, hours were constantly recurring replete with bitter reflection, which he had no one to participate and to soothe.

\* \* \* \* \*

Delmont was now at the university.

There was a struggle in his nature ; for it was originally soft and indulgent, and he was no contemner of the understanding of women ; but, as he advanced in years, he found men selfish and deceitful, women vain and foolish : — the one became objects of hatred, the other of mockery and levity — yet there was always a struggle in his heart between his natural and his acquired feelings. He was not wholly a misanthrope — he here and there thought he got glimpses of virtue in men : in women he found nothing to respect ; he considered them as neither bad nor good, but fulfilling their destinies : he was pleased with their smiles and their beauty, and he cared not for their fame, because it was all that they cared for themselves ; and in general he acted lightly towards them. He hated society, yet at times associated with the light and careless. But growing tired of folly, and impelled, half by nature, and half by dint of study, he formed to himself a system, which ever after chained him to life : — he lived to soften the rigour



of poverty, and to house content in the cottages of his dependents. He felt by it some relaxation of agony — he could not call it happiness — but it gave to life sufficient value to determine him to remain in it.

With pleasure and love, such as are called so by the world, he was soon satiated — but it was neither pleasure nor love. Real pleasure he never felt after the horrors of Matilda's death ; and love, such as he conceived might exist, if men and women were worthy of it, he never knew. Yet he loved Matilda sweetly and purely ; but that love was a pleasantness of intercourse — it wanted that fulness of the heart which contemplated excellence might give. He sometimes employed his imagination in the formation of a woman to whom he could devote himself ; but he had never met with her, and knew he never should.

Affectionate remembrance and remorse still accompanied the thought of Matilda and of Harvey — they never could be wiped away. Some other painful events,

tragedies too, but not deep ones, remained upon his mind. He never sought to injure, and he believed, the mournful fate of Matilda and her father excepted, he never did. The world misunderstood his character.

"Be it so," said Delmont; "I wish not amity with the world. I fain would be at peace with myself—but how? Had I plunged into the river there would have been an end: old horrors would not have haunted me; and new follies would not have accumulated on my head; but the foul stream into which I plunged has borne me along, living, amidst horrors old and new; and I know not which is most hateful to me, the world or myself."

Delmont found that revelry and folly were not oblivious antidotes. After a year or two he retired from them, and sought his relief in books, and in the system he had formed. Leisure and fancy prompted him to raise a monument to Remorse and Sorrow in a little grove on one of his estates. It consists

of a simple urn upon a pedestal: the pedestal contains a metal box; and in the box are deposited a silver plate inscribed MATILDA, the fatal cup, and this story.

## OBSERVATIONS

*Added to the foregoing Manuscript eight years  
after it was written.*

I HAVE at length had courage to re-peruse this memorial. The agony the reading has cost me cannot be conceived :— to be felt, the person who reads must have been implicated in the same circumstances, and be similarly organized to the unhappy writer of it. I shudder and wonder alternately. I shudder at the events—I wonder at myself—I wonder infinitely more at the goodness of God. Were he a God of passion, should I not have been dashed to pieces, and my soul given over to the tormentor? Were he not a God of Love, should I have been reserved for hope in the glad tidings of peace? I shudder and repent—I wonder and adore. His ways are inscrutable on earth, yet so

plain are some of them, that it is only a monstrous pride that demands a knowledge of all to confirm submission to any.

In the observations I am going to make, I mean not the slightest apology for myself.

Though I do not always see the hand of Providence in the events of life, I have now been endeavouring to trace it in the death of the father and the child, and the preservation of the being whose conduct caused it. Were there no life after this, the attempt would be in vain. Shocking facts, inconsistent with goodness, would alone present themselves, and it would again lead to the horrid conclusion, that there was no God. There is another life. Never were spirits riper for heaven than that father and his child : — to the eye of Omniscience it might have appeared a pity to leave them longer on earth : the unhappy being who was caught in the trammels of vice was to be saved, and the spirit of darkness was to be foiled. By extraordinary death horror was impressed upon his soul, and the temptations to self-murder were rendered abet-

tive by guardian angels. The impiety insinuated into his soul, in contemplating the apparently unjust affliction of a parent by the undeserved loss of an innocent daughter, was to be overcome by the apparently casual restoration of a virtuous and lovely daughter to her father. While his soul glowed at that act to which he was unconsciously led by Providence, her noble spirit, animating an impressive form, such as angels may be thought to assume, influenced it to seek God and redemption. He sought and found. — Never was there a sincerer penitent ; — and hope, and faith, and charity are planted in his heart. In this manner have I traced the hand of Providence. Without another life there can be no God ; without God all is confusion : — with a God, immortality follows, and all is order.

When this memorial was written, the writer was still under age, and in a deplorable state of impiety : — this is but too obvious in his style, and inconsiderate remarks. Ashamed of these he would obliterate them, but he does not wish to hide from his friends the state from

which they have extricated him. The more he was entangled in the snares of the enemy of mankind, the greater is his obligation to *his Preserver*, who led him to a Saviour, and the more unbounded his gratitude.

## LETTER LXVII.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Miss Saville.*

THE pen is in my hand to address my benefactress, yet am I afraid to trust it, for I strive in vain to command my thoughts. When you read this, my dear Miss Saville, the cause of the wretched life your friend has led will no longer be a mystery to you. You will see that he has not abhorred himself without reason ; and perhaps you will abhor him too. Should it be so, I will not deny the justice of your feeling ; but it will be more than I can bear ; and I fear that all the strength of virtue and of religion, which you have been the means of my obtaining, will not support me against the shock my nerves have received from the terrible retrospection I have taken, and the dread of the effect



which the disclosure I am making will produce on your mind.

Do not ask me, why then I make it. The loss of your esteem would be fresh torture to my soul ; but the possession of it wrings my heart, which looks into itself as you should look, and sees as you might see. Esteem and vice are incompatible : — crime is the poison of love. Contemptible must be that spirit which can enjoy the love and esteem that would not be bestowed upon him were he known. This is a strong feeling of my nature, and you now see why I have hated the world, and why I have avoided you, and the friends you have given me, — for kindness was more intolerable than seclusion. You now see why I mixed more with the inconsiderate and weak ; — they had no esteem to give ; — they led the life of butterflies, and I was at times ready enough to laugh at them : — hence my character, hence my indifference to reputation. Could I have foreseen that event of my life which brought me acquainted with you, and its consequences, character would have

been dear to me, as it is now; and though I could not have obliterated the past, I would have made provision for the future. Most certain it is, that since I have known you; I have been inexpressibly anxious to deserve your esteem; and perhaps you will therefore think some portion of it not unmerited; — that thought is a cordial, or will be so when you confirm it. Should I be so happy, you will not refuse me the request I am going to make.

With a blot of so deep a nature on my life, I dare not, I must not, entertain the thought of earthly happiness. I cannot hope for love. The woman from whom happiness might flow cannot but be unattainable by me: — her heart might be led to pity, and I might even force her esteem in future, but she can never love me. I am so convinced of this that, although your cousins have given me a view of what happiness there is on earth in the marriage of congenial minds, I have resolved to forego all thought of it. As I shall never marry then, I have figured to myself an allevi-

ation of my misfortune, or rather of my just punishment. My mind has never been equal to my fortune:—I have spent little, and I am burthened with useless wealth. I cannot enjoy it, and to bestow it indiscriminately, is but weakness. It ought to be dispersed, it ought not to lie hoarded;—to whom can I better look for the disposal of it than one who has rendered me such unspeakable service, who so well understands the use of it? I beseech you not to refuse me this consolation. By my friend Vernon, I have sent a deed of gift to Mr. Saville and your cousin, which makes you mistress of a considerable income, and of the disposal of the whole principal sum. I have entreated them to use their influence with you not to deny me. He brings also a full power from me for the immediate transfer of the funds, and he has promised me, if you will permit him to speak upon the subject, to endeavour to obviate any objection your delicacy may raise. I will therefore confine myself to one. The sentiment on which the rejection of gifts by ladies is founded, I

think a just one. But this is a very different case, and in fact the very reverse of the one on which that sentiment rests : the gift is retrospective, it is an act of gratitude, and wholly unaccompanied with a pretension, or a hope that might render it a case of delicacy. Your acceptance of it is but to alleviate the misery of a heart which dares not aspire to happiness.

Once more, I most earnestly entreat you not to refuse me the only favour I shall ever ask. It will be a blessing to me, one I trust that Heaven will confirm ; and to Heaven shall my prayers be offered for you. I will add but one word more. If after a while, if after the first shock the perusal of my story will give to your feelings, it is possible for you to soften your opinion, to mitigate the sentence I deserve, it would be worth to me even more than your acceptance of my gift. Nothing earthly can equal the torment of being abhorred by one we love. — Oh ! if possible, do not abhor me !

FRANCIS DARRELL.

## LETTER LXVIII.

*Mr. Vernon to Sir Francis Darrell.*

Piccadilly.

MY DEAR DARRELL,

I WILL not keep you in suspense ; but, as you are a man and a Christian, I call upon you to exert yourself in a manner worthy of the cause you have embraced. Support your spirits in this moment of trial, and it will perhaps be the last severe one you will be put to. This probably depends upon your conduct under it.

Though I write, I have it not in my power to say much on the circumstances which hastened my return to town. I will begin by giving you the comfort of knowing that Godfrey and Mr. Saville are your unalterable friends ; so I think is Mrs. Godfrey, but she is silent : Miss Saville I have not seen. Do not now

lose your senses because I have not seen her : — I augur favourably from it, and am the more convinced by it that I am not wrong in the judgment I have formed. You must not expect her to answer your letter, at least just now. Godfrey is going to write to you, but circumstances prevent his doing it immediately.

Of course you are prepared, my dear Darrell, to hear that your friends were greatly affected by your story. I read it myself to Mr. Saville and Godfrey : — the latter shed tears; the former cried like a child; and my tears again were mixed with theirs.

“ There never was a more melancholy entrance into life,” said Godfrey, as he wiped away the tears that continued to stream down his cheeks.

“ Dreadful !” said Mr. Saville, as soon as he could speak — “ to me most dreadful ! It has brought his father to my mind with a train of agonizing recollections.”

Godfrey, on hearing this, recovered himself, and entreated his uncle not to yield to such thoughts.

"Oh!" said Saville, "they are past;—I have out-lived their bitterness, George:—the pangs I now feel are great, but I should be happy still if I could persuade myself that this were not a hopeless case. Vernon," continued he, "I will ingenuously own to you, that had Sir Francis's declaration of loving my daughter been made unaccompanied by this sad tale, it would have given me a pleasure beyond any other event in life."

"The circumstances," said Godfrey, "are truly melancholy in themselves; but it is evident that he has, in the bitterness of his heart, taken pains to place them in the most striking and awful light. I do not think the case hopeless."

"Augusta," said Saville, "however grateful her nature, and even prepossessed in favour of Sir Francis, will, I fear, not think as you do."

"Vernon," said Godfrey, "you need not be told how favourable our sentiments are towards Sir Francis, but I think we must consider his letters well

before we act upon them. Allowing all that is due to his generous nature, it is evident that in this immense gift, he is actuated by love, though attended by despair. In that point of view can my cousin accept of it?"

"She will not listen to it for a moment," said Saville.

"Poor fellow," said I, "it will break his heart — it is the ultimate object of his love, the only one. He has not the slightest idea that Miss Saville will hear of him as a lover, and he has proposed this gift as a means of reconciling himself to the lot on earth which he thinks he merits. May I engage you both not to oppose it?"

"My dear Vernon," said Saville, "reflect upon what you ask. If a woman can accept such a gift from a man, standing in the situation Sir Francis does, she may with equal propriety take into consideration whether she may admit the thought of him as a lover. If you were to ask me not to oppose the latter consideration, I should candidly say that I would not; for, sad as his story is, I



think he has atoned — but, in saying this, I do not mean to encourage the idea, for women, my friend, think differently from us on these subjects.”

“Augusta,” said Godfrey, “has very delicate opinions I know, but she has also a fund of good sense which will enable her to discriminate between wickedness inherent in the spirit, and a wicked action resulting inconsiderately from the instruction and example of a corrupt associate. — If nothing else opposed it, I am of opinion, that, upon reflection, she would sooner consent to hear of Sir Francis as a lover than to accept the gift.”

“Would to Heaven!” cried I, “I could report such a decision to my friend!”

“Softly,” said Godfrey; “I said if nothing else opposed it. — I do not mean to raise an idea that my cousin would be ready to admit of his addresses, even were this unhappy story removed altogether. — She has peculiar notions on Religion.”

“Oh! that that were all!” rejoined

I: "then you will let her see the manuscript?"

"I do not see how we can do otherwise," said Mr. Saville: "we are in the habits of unbounded confidence. We must first prepare her and my niece; and then we will leave the papers with them to peruse by themselves."

"There is another person," said Godfrey, "to whom I wish I could show these papers — a person extremely interested in the happiness of Sir Francis, and whose sentiments would have great weight — I mean the bishop of \* \*."

I took upon me to say that I was sure you would readily consent.—He said that, as I thought so, if you did not forbid it, he would take an opportunity in a few days to speak to him on the subject. I am persuaded, my dear Darrell, that you will have no objection; but there is time to make it if you have. Therefore should you not write by the return of the post, I shall take your consent for granted, and suffer Godfrey to carry your manuscript to the Bishop. As I told him that I should write to you immediately, he

desired me to present his best regards and say that he would write to you soon.

Our meeting and conversation took place yesterday, but too late for me to write. — I called this morning: neither Godfrey nor Saville was at home. I begged to see the ladies, and Mrs. Godfrey came to me. I was with her alone for a few minutes. I wish you could have looked into my heart—but this is not a time to talk of myself: I will take a better opportunity to acknowledge my obligations to you; yet I will say that my feelings were such as would gratify yours. I told her that I particularly wished to see her cousin. She said that she could not see me then; on which I endeavoured to draw their sentiments from her. I hoped, I said, that she would excuse my anxiety on a subject in which your comfort was so much involved.

“It is a very painful subject,” she replied, “and certainly not one for me to discuss.”

I thought she alluded to the manuscript, and I therefore said —

“Darrell’s only comfort depends upon your cousin’s acceptance.”

She stopped me.

“I cannot speak to you on this subject at all, Mr. Vernon,” said she, with a countenance evidently of sorrow, “and I will frankly tell you, that I wish at present to return to my cousin, whom I have just left.”

“I will not detain you,” replied I, “but pray, pray let compassion mingle with your other feelings; and let your amiable cousin keep in mind that he was a boy, that he is a man; that he was an infidel, that he is a Christian. Let her peruse and re-peruse the traces of Providence in his few additional observations to his manuscript.”

“I cannot but feel for him,” said she, “and you may tell him so.”

I walked to the door with her, and came away as she went up the stairs.

Although, my dear Darrell, I have been able to communicate nothing from Miss Saville herself, I think that what I have said ought to comfort you. I rely

upon your supporting yourself with firmness. Tell me so by the next, and I will write again.

Ever yours,

L. VERNON.

## LETTER LXIX.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Mr. Vernon.*

MY DEAR VERNON,

A THOUSAND thanks for your letter. — Mr. Saville and Mr. Godfrey are worthy, kind-hearted men; but I am a fool or a madman, thus idiotically to have cut myself off from the little happiness which circumstances, the most unexpected, the most extraordinary, the most providential, had at length created for me. Not content with regard and esteem, I must, forsooth, be finely sentimental, and refuse them, unless I had them for my crimes and all. Was there ever such idiotism? Why did you let me do it? Could not you have seen that I was under the dominion of passion, and that I

was destroying the little, but exquisite particle of bliss that I had been permitted to find on the earth? I might have gone on enjoying for years the smiles of kindness, the sweet offices of friendship, had I not been the dupe of a coxcomical morality that could not be content with the secret communion of the heart with the omniscient confessor, the omnipotent absolver.— Oh! fool! fool! To think that I should ever after hold a place in the esteem of such beings as Miss Saville and Mrs. Godfrey! Tell me not of men.— Women like them are a degree between us and angels. The best of men want that pure delicacy of feeling which they possess. I am not ungrateful to Saville and to Godfrey, but even they, good as they are, want that refinement which raises an Augusta and a Caroline above our sex. They require not that freedom from corruption which angels do. Mrs. Godfrey pities, so I am sure does her cousin. She can forgive, so can her cousin; but is it not clear that esteem, regard, and intercourse of soul are at an end? If the Bishop can undo

what I have done, and only reinstate me where I was a week ago, let him have all my horrors to contemplate.

Oh! pardon me, my dear Vernon — you know not how ill I am. — Since you left me, I have scarcely slept. — I believe I deceived myself in thinking that there was not a hope lurking at the bottom of my heart — If there was, it is now crushed. — Miss Saville's refusal to see you; Mrs. Godfrey's reserve — yes, it is over. — Let me hear from you immediately.

Yours, yours,

F. DARRELL.



## - LETTER LXX.

*Mr. Vernon to Sir Francis Darrell.*

MY DEAR DARRELL,

WHAT I have seen you suffer makes me feel very keenly for you, or I should, in my usual style, be inclined to say that it is very clear you are mad, and that I have not a doubt of love being a species of *insania*. For Heaven's sake, my friend, have a little patience, and endeavour to practise as well as profess. And let me tell you that your wishes are in much better train than the acuteness of your reasoning about female *angelism* has placed them.

Rather than let you go mad on imaginary grounds, I will tell you the reason Miss Saville has not seen me, trusting

to your common sense, to give nothing but a common meaning to what I tell you. The fact is, she has been ill, and is not yet sufficiently recovered to see me — but she sends you a message, and such a one as ought to set your perturbed spirit at rest. — She bids you be of good cheer, and does not abruptly refuse your gift, but will reason with you upon it when she is better. If this does not tranquillize you, I know not what will. — I beseech you, Darrell, to be rational, and not suffer such ebullitions of passion to torture and distract you. — Shall I come to you, or stay in town to communicate my observations?

You at length suspect that something of hope has been lurking at the bottom of your heart. — I give you joy — cherish it — the discovery at this crisis is an omen of joy. — If that does not content you, see a still more propitious one in the illness of your lovely mistress. I know not what our friend Godfrey will do with the Bishop; but look upon me

as Pontifex at the court of Love, and take my advice, which is, to think no more about your gift; but to contemplate the hope you have discovered, and let it have its proper agency. I have had an agreeable interview with Godfrey and his wife. — Your history was at first a dreadful shock to the cousins; and it is clear who was the most affected by it. It has given a pang and cost tears, but you have lost no ground:—if Pity be, according to the old saying, the sister of Love, you have gained ground. However, having said enough to allay your fever of *idiotism*, I shall leave Godfrey and Miss Saville to express their own sentiments, after observing to you, that you could not cherish the hope you have discovered, without the disclosure you have made.

Having, I trust, restored you to some degree of tranquillity, I shall conclude this letter with a few words about myself. Let me, my dear Darrell, call your attention to other striking results of the tragedy in which you had so painful a part, and

which may be added to your observations in tracing from it the hand of Providence.

Had those melancholy events not taken place, it is not unlikely that you would have spent your fortune like other young men, who on coming of age have no one to controul them: — the turn those events gave to your mind has been beneficial to thousands. You have despised only the despicable part of society; you have been a guardian angel to the poor. The next result I shall mention is, the restoration of Grove-Park to the Saville family. In gay, thoughtless, luxurious dissipation, it would never have occurred to your mind; you would never have gone in search of Saville; you would never have rescued his daughter from the hands of villains. The last result calls for *my* gratitude. Your late counsels in our correspondence had begun to have some weight upon my mind; they awakened reflection, but they had by no means decided my conduct. It was not till I knew your story, and witnessed your agonies, that I was fully roused, and my eyes opened on the precipice before me.

Good heaven! with what feelings is man endowed! What instruments they are for torture! The rack, and all the engines of bodily pain which the devil has helped man to invent, cannot produce a tythe of the agony I have seen you suffer from remorse and despair. I have endured the pain of wounds—I have seen it endured by common soldiers; I have witnessed amputations, and the flesh trembling beneath the knife; and I see that those are far easier to bear than the acute sensations inflicted by the feelings of the heart. To me life has hitherto offered only pleasure. I have enjoyed the kindness of affection, and the blessings of well constituted nerves; but I have been upon the point of sacrificing these gifts of heaven, which I never before learned to appreciate. I have been thoughtless, I have sinned, I have been sorry, but of remorse I have never had occasion to taste, except, perhaps, at this moment for prospective guilt. This is the result of your story—it shook me to the soul. The consequences of your action were awful, most awful; but in

comparing them with what would have followed mine had I perpetrated it, they lose half their horror: the untimely death of the young and the innocent is very affecting, but is it equal to living misery? Can he who has premeditatedly cut off the happiness of his friend, and destroyed the virtue of his friend's wife, feel less remorse because they live to suffer and be lost on earth? Much I think may be said to calm you, Darrell, and, young as you are, prepare you for the happiness Providence has provided for you; but had I pursued and succeeded in the guilt I meditated, my mind must have been an earthly hell to me; the man is so good, the woman is so virtuous, I cannot bear the thought even of the intention; and when I saw Mrs. Godfrey for the few minutes I mentioned in my last on coming to town, my heart made a solemn though secret atonement to her; and I was conscious of feeling an affection for her which I once wished might be similar to that I feel for my admirable sister. This, my dear Darrell, is to me not the least valuable of the providential

results of those events, which you must now consider as permitted for their consequences, and which there is therefore reason to believe were in themselves mercies to those who were taken into another world. And let me ask you, would you not rather be the inconsiderate cause of those awful occurrences than the villain I intended to be? Come, let us both recover ourselves; we have fortunately been brought to our senses in time. For the future I will think more, but still I say, let us think cheerfully.

You must revive, you must live, and love. It is evidently the will of Providence. I will do so too; the two first I shall find easy, the last I will endeavour to do — out of the Vortex.

Alas! the Vortex! They certainly form the mass which you did not know how to dispose of till the Bishop of \* \* convinced you that they were in very good hands. They ought not, however, to be given up entirely. I am of Lady Mount-Vernon's opinion, that till they throw themselves into the irremediable gulf, they should be invited and allured

from it by example and kindness. With this spirit, and with no other, will I in future mix with the Vortex.

For the present, adieu ! Be composed, and send me a line or two to say you are so ; but torment not your pen with imaginary evils, I beseech you.

Ever yours,

L. VERNON.



## LETTER LXXI.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Mr. Vernon.*

MY DEAR VERNON,

**I** THANK you for your very kind letter. — I am better. — By no means think of leaving town, but write to me by every post. Though better, I cannot be easy, till I have more particular accounts of Miss Saville ; in fact, till you have conversed with her. You are sure SHE desired me *to be of good cheer*, and talked of reasoning with me ? Remember, my friend, that I must not be treated like a child. Attempt not to deceive me into bearing. I will be patient, but I must see things as they are. I will not magnify her illness, but tell me precisely the nature of it, and the cause, and how she is when you write.

You are very, very kind — but how can I follow your advice ? I fancied that

I detected something like hope in my heart, and you immediately cry "cherish it." How can I cherish what I am afraid to think of? And how can her illness raise hope? Even if it were caused by my story, can horror raise hope? If I could dare to cherish it, it would be from that dear message of cheer. What balm flowed into my heart with that message! I return to my former opinion respecting the disclosure of the events which have been secretly gnawing my heart for eight years past. It was absolutely necessary, and yet it seemed more likely to create despair than hope. — Certainly my heart is lighter for it.

Your additional results of those sad events of my life are a new and pleasant medicine to my soul — particularly the last. I cannot express to you how I was revived by seeing of what important service my misery has been to you. That conquest over yourself, with the reflection that accompanies it, was all that was wanting to make you the most amiable of men in my opinion. Ours is now real friendship. How good has Providence

been to me! *You* shall be cheerful for *me*, if I cannot be cheerful myself. Cheerfulness cannot reside in a breast which hope abandons. — Raise hope in mine. — Cheerfulness was natural to me in my infancy, and will return with hope. — I cannot think or write on other topics. — Let me hear from you every day.

Ever yours,

F. DARRELL.

## LETTER LXXII.

*Mr. Godfrey to Sir Francis Darrell.*

Hanover-Square.

MY DEAR FRIEND,

YOU have heard from Vernon how we all felt for you. — To the excess of those feelings I beg you to attribute my not immediately answering your letter. My great desire was to give your wounded spirit substantial relief. I could have written you a sheet of condolence from the sensations the perusal of your manuscript gave me, but condolence was not my intention : — my wish was to close your wounds, which have been kept too long open by the susceptibility of your nature. You know how I love the Bishop of \* \* ; that he has been more than a father to me. His piety is as unaffected as his understanding is en-

larged. The subject of your manuscript is one peculiarly adapted to his consideration ; and, with Vernon's concurrence, unopposed by you, I have consulted him upon it. I left it with him a couple of days, and his attention to it has produced a letter from him to yourself. My dear friend, I give you joy. Throw it no longer away. I will not anticipate the Bishop's sentiments, which I am sure you will not suffer to have been written in vain. They have had a most delightful effect upon all your friends in Hanover-Square, and I cannot tell you how I rejoice that you prevailed upon yourself to send us your manuscript.

I will not damp your pleasure by discussing the other subjects of your letter at present. You cannot but know the high place you hold in the estimation of my uncle and cousin, as well as in that of Mrs. Godfrey and myself. I must not, however, hide from you that Miss Saville objected to what the Bishop says relative to her, and at first begged he might be requested to alter it ; but, reflecting on the necessity of some notice

being taken of that point, she yielded to our persuasions of allowing the letter to go as it is, accompanied with an explanatory one from herself to you. The subject is one on which my uncle has always resolved to leave her to herself. This letter, of course, contains his sentiments as well as mine. Let me have the pleasure of hearing that your mind has recovered its tone, and believe me to be

Your sincerely attached friend

GEORGE GODFREY.

## LETTER LXXIII.

*From the Bishop of \* \* to Sir Francis Darrell.*

DEAR SIR,

I HOPED for the pleasure of your acquaintance before you left town, but my friend George Godfrey has accounted for my disappointment, by imputing it to the suddenness of your departure.

I have read your manuscript, and the additional observations lately written; and I think I do myself honour in saying, that I read them with tears. Your excellent remarks on tracing the hand of Providence have anticipated the strongest arguments for the restoration of your peace of mind, after so much suffering, and so complete a repentance. You have been much afflicted, but your affliction has been to good purpose. I have not taken up the pen to give you a lecture

on religion, and to point out to you the double effects of God's judgments, whose punishments lead to happiness, but to soothe your mind as a friend, and to endeavour to restore it to the full enjoyment of its powers in giving earthly happiness. Your sufferings and your repentance have been admitted, and I take upon me as the minister of Him who judges in mercy, to declare that you are fully absolved from the sins of which you have so truly repented. You know it to be the Christian doctrine, that we are invested with power to pronounce absolution upon repentance. You are yourself the best judge of the sincerity of yours; but I am also perfectly convinced of it, and I am sure that I have done no more than my duty in what I have said; I therefore not only entreat, but expect of you to feel yourself restored to the favour of your Maker, and you have my prayers, that you may never more forfeit it.

This language has something ministerial in it; I could not avoid it, for it possesses more strength than any thing



I can say for myself. But man is so formed that he will often derive more comfort from the familiar reasonings of his friend, than from the most solemn official declarations. I will, therefore, add a few friendly observations. The first thing I shall endeavour to do is to remove the excessive horror you have attached to your crime, which scarcely belongs to it. The subsequent events, God knows, are awful enough only to hear of, and deplorable would it have been, had you at the time reasoned yourself into a conviction, that the want of intention to produce the ulterior mischiefs exonerated you from them; it would have made you completely guilty of them, for it would have shown a ripeness of understanding that ought to have foreseen them. Upon the head of a man they would have rested, and he must have answered for all the consequences of his actions; but this was otherwise with you, who were in your early years of boyhood. You were led astray, and, though it appears you knew you were doing wrong, which constitutes the crime,

you were not aware of the extent of the wrong you were doing. This consideration, undoubtedly, ought to relieve you of the burden of the thought, connected with the serious consequences which ensued. And if to this you add, what you have yourself suggested in your additional observations, the great innocence of the characters, and their ripeness for immortality, I think the continuance of your remorse will be unreasonable and superfluous.

I have read your story not only with sorrow but with wonder. Such repeated repulses of the intended act of suicide could not be casual. You have said they were the acts of guardian angels. Many passages in Scripture countenance and confirm the opinion of such spirits, and I should have no objection to your believing, that your preservation constituted a portion of the happiness of the spirits of those two amiable persons; that they have been appointed to combat with the evil spirit for you; that they led you to the wonderful *restoration* of a *daughter* to her *father*; and that, by the

appointment of Providence, they may lead you to the enjoyment of happiness in this life.

Mr. Godfrey, in confiding your manuscript to me, showed me your letter to him, by which I am made acquainted with the state of your inclinations respecting his cousin. She is good and amiable, and too sensible to suffer the misfortunes of a boy eight years ago to affect her opinion of a man who, I am no flatterer, may be pronounced such a partner for life as she ought to have. I know not her opinion, but I feel interested for you, and for her. You appear to me calculated to make each other happy, and to set an example of religion and virtue to the world. I am aware that she has been brought up in the Roman Catholic persuasion. If she consents to your addresses, you may, and ought to reason with her on this subject. If she cannot be convinced, the difference need not be made an impediment to your union. I am not so rigid as to require an absolute conformity in religious opinions, however much it is to be wished.

This young lady's good sense will, I trust, not suffer the difference of opinion to influence her determination. In this, as in all else, you have the best wishes, and the blessing of,

Dear Sir,

Your sincere friend,

W. \* \*

## LETTER LXXIV.

*Miss Saville to Sir Francis Darrell.*

How differently, Sir, must I address you now to what I have been accustomed, and to what I wish ;— I will, however, endeavour to preserve my claim to your esteem, and to my own, by writing with the utmost candour. I appreciate the understanding and the virtues of Sir Francis Darrell too highly to fear that, in doing this, I shall commit myself. I trust he now knows me sufficiently to need no assurance that, however gratified, however flattered I may be, however allured by the pictures of imagination, I have but one spring for my conduct in life, consisting of principles which have been instilled into my mind from my infancy. Indeed, Sir, I feel myself most honoured in having gained so high a place in your opinion ; and could I take

into consideration the very flattering testimony you have thought proper to give of it, I have no doubt that I should esteem it as a source of infinite happiness. I return you my heartfelt thanks, I beg your acceptance of my gratitude and my regard, but I must intreat you to turn your thoughts of happiness into another channel.

The proofs you have given me of your affection have sunk deep into my heart ; and my sense of them will be as lasting as life, which I would lay down to serve you ; but I should be unworthy of your esteem, and, consequently, should soon lose your love, could I so far forget the superior duty which I have to perform in life, as to suffer my resolution to be overcome by any tempting prospect of happiness, or even to give pleasure to friends whom I love better than myself. I have been told, and even the Bishop of \* \* 's letter to you testifies, that a difference in religious opinions is not an insurmountable obstacle to such an union as you have honoured me with thinking of. I hope I am not obstinate or presumptuous, but

I cannot be of that opinion. I have always considered congeniality of sentiments, on worldly topics, as necessary in such a union; and, if so, is it not still more requisite on the subject which connects our hopes with heaven? I know not that I shall ever enter into such a union, but I am certain that I never can, without previously endeavouring to accord, on such essential points, with the person to whom it would become my duty to submit my will. If there is an appearance of argument in what I have written, I beg that you will not infer from it, that I wish to be reasoned with. I have expressed the only sentiment I cannot relinquish to my friends; and, bound as I am to you by gratitude and friendship, it was impossible for me to say less to you in support of the part I have taken.

The letter that you did me the honour to write to me by Mr. Vernon had the effect upon me which the feelings expressed in it, and the generosity of your conduct towards me, were calculated to produce; receive my thanks for it, and

permit me to pass in silence what might give you pain. I will only say generally, that, except on the point I have already mentioned, I agree with the Bishop in his admirable distinctions, and in his reasoning. With respect to the magnificent gift you intended me, what can I say? I did mean to convince you that it was not in my power to accept it, but I feel too much to argue upon it. I cannot deny the influence of your whole conduct over my mind: but this I must leave to my friends.

God bless you, Sir! I am proud of your good opinion. I hope to preserve your friendship through life, and shall ever esteem it an honour to be considered by you as

Your grateful friend,

AUGUSTA SAVILLE.



## LETTER LXXV.

*Sir Francis Darrell to the Bishop of \*\*.*

Belmont.

MY LORD,

I SHOULD be the most ungrateful of men were I not to acknowledge the immense obligation I am under to your Lordship, and I beg you to believe that, after Mr. Godfrey communicated to me your letter to him, it was my intention to express my sense of your goodness, both by writing and personally. That this has been delayed so long, I am free to confess, is owing to agitations of mind, which convince me, that I have been more successful in the theory, than in the practice of Christianity. Your friendship, my Lord, is an honour and a blessing, which I should never have aspired to, but I see in it the will of Providence, and I am more thankful for it than I have words to express. It shall be my first duty,

when I am next in London, to come and beg your blessing from your lips, and endeavour to cultivate the friendship which is so generously offered me.

It would perhaps become me, my Lord, to notice particularly the points in both your letters, but I hope you will permit me to say generally, that I was fully struck with the perspicuity of your elucidations. I might dwell upon the reflections which they produced, but the result would only be, that conviction was the consequence, and the reflection would not be new to you; but I will say what I think will please you, that, in future, instead of demanding the submission of all propositions to my understanding, I will distrust and humble my understanding in every important enquiry; by which I do not mean to say, that I will not always use my reason, but that I will not be so proud of it as to imagine that it is unerring, and that I will never again reject, merely because I do not comprehend. But while I say this, I must not leave you to infer, that I at once subscribe completely to all the doc-

trines of the national church, of which nevertheless I trust you will accept me as a member. In spite of the clear manner in which you showed a ground for believing an eternity of misery, I feel a great repugnance to that doctrine — to thinking it consistent with the goodness, or even with the justice of the Almighty.

I will not take upon me to enter upon other less important differences in the present state of my mind — they do not appear to me to be essential points of our religion, or of sufficient weight to cause a separation from the national establishment; for, though I do not conceive any establishment to be a necessary part of Christianity, the spirit of which may influence regions and worlds unknown to us, I think it most desirable that there should be a point of union to which the religious feelings of a whole country may tend, and by which they may be preserved. I think the desire to preserve that union a patriotic sentiment, and that nothing but an essential point should interfere with it.

May I, my Lord, venture here to say,

that the diversities in the various churches do not appear to me to affect the great principles of Christianity, and that a sincere Roman, a sincere Greek, all sincere communities of Christians, are included in the great benefits of that infinitely extensive dispensation of God's goodness. You perhaps suspect, my Lord, to what this last observation tends. The interest which you have expressed in my temporal happiness emboldens me to speak of it to you. The knowledge I have of Miss Saville convinces me that she would be a prize, not only conducive to temporal happiness, but, by her virtues and her piety, to the promotion of immortal prospects. I own to you, that her resolution not to listen to the addresses of a man of a different religious persuasion affects me extremely. I also once resolved never to unite myself with a person of a different faith, but the reasons above stated, now confirmed by your sentiment, have removed all objections to her remaining a Roman Catholic. And I will add, that her firmness and constancy to what she

considers as truth exalt her still more in my opinion. On the other hand, I should be unworthy of her esteem, I should be unworthy of the absolution you have given me, could I, from the excitements of passion, pretend to conviction which I did not feel. In the sincerity of my adopting the national establishment, I have not dissembled to your Lordship the principle that guided me, which involves some diversity of opinion; how then can I say that I accord on doctrines infinitely more repugnant to my feelings, as well as to my reason! I cannot, I never will: — no prize on earth shall tempt me to it. Yet the hope which has sprung up in my breast since your favourable decision on my unhappy story, since the absolution I have received, struggles for a continuance of existence, and I shall make one effort to persuade her that the points of difference in our opinions are not so material as to be imperative upon her to refuse me her hand. I hope I shall not do wrong. — I will go no farther than this; and, in case of failure, I will devote my-

self to a life of celibacy, with a resolution of doing as much good on earth as I can. In this case, I shall beg your advice and assistance. You know that wealth has fallen to my lot in this world — I would fain have the assistance of Miss Saville to put it out to its proper usury, even if she refuses the master of it ; but it appears that the delicacy of the female character will oppose this, and I shall therefore consider your aid as one of the proofs of the inestimable friendship which Godfrey has obtained for me.

I am,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's obliged,

And truly grateful servant,

FRANCIS DARRELL.

## LETTER LXXVI.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Miss Saville.*

I HAD not yet dared to aspire to happiness, when your cousin's cover brought me two letters, one of which crushed hope even before it germed, and the other saved the broken seed and raised it in defiance of the ruin. The former, and the first read, was from Miss Saville, the latter from Godfrey's excellent friend the Bishop of \* \*. I thought myself unworthy to solicit your hand, but you were too ingenuous to seem ignorant of my heart, and too good to suspend the declaration of your resolve.

Your letter is worthy of the writer ; it is such a one as my reflection tells me I might expect from you ; and, as I was destitute of pretensions to your favour, I purposed to endeavour to reason myself into an acquiescence with the will

of Heaven. — But how shall I tell you the conflict which the Bishop's has produced in my heart! His decision, his absolution, his blessing, his opinion of you, were like so many divine instruments raising me from a dark cavern into which I had fallen, and restoring a desponding wretch to the glorious light of day. Hope, hitherto unknown to my unhappy bosom, sprung up with a strength that overcame even the blow it had received from you. Oh! Miss Saville, I cannot all at once acquiesce in the resolution of tearing it out of my heart so soon again. You know not how sweet it is to hope — I never knew — I never could have conceived it: — I beseech you to let it rest where it is, if but for a little, even if it must be at last rooted entirely out. — Hitherto I have loved you in silence and with agony — to dare to say it and to hope is a delight I dreamed not of as belonging to human nature. — Now that I know it, will you not think it cruel to deprive me of it at once and immediately? Cruelty is not in your nature; you will at least hear me



before you finally resolve to separate hope from love.

Since the encouragement of my friend has emboldened me, — since the objection you have made rests upon a sentiment which, however pure, however amiable, admits of reasoning, I implore you not to refuse my suit till you have given me a little time to endeavour to obviate it — And I will begin by promising you that I will not now or ever in my life make an attempt to divert you from the principles to which you are attached. My only object shall be to persuade you that you will not be erring from those principles in listening to my suit. I ask but a little time, and permission to inform myself upon the subject, that I may collect all that can be said in my favour. — Grant it, I beseech you — say you will hear me before you pronounce the irrevocable lot of

FRANCIS DARRELL.

## LETTER LXXVII.

*Miss Saville to Sir Francis Darrell.*

YOUR letter, my dear Sir, has given me much pain. I must repeat that I think it the duty of a woman when she becomes a wife to endeavour to mould her sentiments by those of her husband, and certainly to submit her will to his. With persons of different religious persuasions, marriage becomes a question not more between the parties than between heaven and earth. Being now fully acquainted with my sentiments, you cannot but be aware of the impossibility of my acceding to your wishes while I retain them; and you have been generous enough to promise me to make no attempt to alter my principles. I will therefore not scruple to comply with your request of hearing all that you may imagine sufficiently reasonable to sway

my mind to the change of the sentiment which tells me that there is something more than impropriety in so solemn an engagement between persons of different religions. My compliance, I assure you, arises from my own desire to satisfy you; but I must not dissemble that my father and cousins have also expressed it to be their wish. We propose being at Grove Park during the Easter recess, and we shall have the pleasure of seeing you.

In concluding, let me take the liberty of observing that, in the avowed state of your mind, prudence I think would suggest a different course, but it shall be as you please.

I am,

Your truly grateful friend,  
AUGUSTA SAVILLE.

## LETTER LXXVIII.

*Mr. Vernon to Sir Francis Darrell.*

MY DEAR DARRELL,

I AM going out of town merely for the purpose of carrying the Count D'Olivastro away from London. I wish to see you, and shall take him your way; but, as I know you would rather be without company at present, we will spend but one day at Belmont, which he has expressed a very great wish to see. We shall arrive probably the day after tomorrow. I need not tell you that Miss Saville is well. — I know you are in correspondence with her. — Success attend you! In great haste,

Ever yours,

L. VERNON.

## LETTER LXXIX.

*Angelica to Augusta.*

Paris, March 30.

MY DEAR AUGUSTA,

AFTER a very pleasant journey, we are at length arrived at this celebrated metropolis, and here have I found all your dear letters, those directed to Florence as well as the packet addressed here, as far as your interview with Miss Craven. Though tired, I could not go to bed till I had read them all through, in succession, as they were written. I shared your various emotions, and was with you and your cousin in all the situations you describe. I could with pleasure go over them again, and write a long letter of my correspondent feelings, but I have Paris to see, my friends, the Dorringtons, to attend to, and my *squirrel* to watch; therefore I shall reserve the expression of

those feelings till I see you, as that will be so soon, and devote the few leisure minutes I have to tell you something of myself and of my companions.

First, let me say that I did not foresee how painful the taking leave of my dear father and mother was to prove, or I think I should not have resolved on taking the journey. Parting is dreadful — I had experienced the pang of it but once before in my life, and that was when you left me. Till the time came, I thought only of meeting you, not of quitting them. The kindness of the Dorringtons, the attentions and good behaviour of my *squirrel*, the sight of the country, and especially the promise my father had given me to be in England this summer, and bring my mother with him, consoled me, and I must say that I have been happy enough.

The Dorringtons are delightful people. — I have great pleasure in thinking that you will know them, as they are friends of your cousin, of whom they speak *con amore*, and as *my* friends too, of whom I shall speak also *con amore*. Miss Dorrington

ton improves both in beauty and amiable manners ; but, wonderful to relate, she has not called off our young friend from his sworn attachment to your Angelica, which is to last till I see Mrs. Dartford, and, after that, all the way through this life if I think proper ; and he vows he never will love any body else, not even you, whose picture he purloined for a fortnight, and replaced when I beat you out of his heart. What think you of his constancy ? In one of your letters, you tell me to look forward and provide myself with the consent of the Marchese and my mother — what will you say to *his* having taken care of that ? But more, what will you say to the Marchese having taken me aside, and made the following speech ?

“ My dear Angelica, you are at a time of life, when young women begin to think of settling themselves in the world. I am sure you are not in a hurry to be married, but at the same time, I would not have you treat the subject with derision, and refuse offers capriciously — This young man — ”

I smiled.

“Nay, don’t laugh — he is a fine young man, and in spite of the folly of his being easily captivated, I am persuaded he will make a good husband. His family, his fortune are unexceptionable — he has asked my permission to solicit your hand, and neither your mother nor I have any objection : — indeed, we should be pleased at your accepting him. His fortune would enable him to pass a great deal of his time in this country, and we could go to his occasionally.”

I think I see your arch smile, Augusta, as if preparing to hear that I am, or am to be, Mrs. Dartford. — Well I *am not* — but what think you? am I *to be*? I laughed with my father on the occasion, and I neither refused nor consented. I told him that I was certain he would change his mind before he got to England, and that I doubted my power of delivering him safe into his mother’s hands.

“Let it depend upon that,” said my father; “and if he gains his mother’s



consent, and you write to me that he has prevailed upon you to name the wedding day, your mother and I will come to be present."

I promised my father to think of his recommendation, but at the same time owned, that I feared to enter into such an engagement with a man whose inconstancy had been so glaring, and even ridiculous. He has really made himself very agreeable to me, my dear Augusta, and I do not say that, if I could put his constancy to the test, I would reject him. But we shall now be soon together, and we will assist each other.

I pray to Heaven that I may find your heart as light as mine ; but I trace something in your later letters that bespeak it otherwise. I will not alarm you, my dearest sister. You possess a heart which has been well trained in obedience to your mind ; and, if gratitude should be found going a little beyond its bounds, you will require no great exertion to recall it. I do not much like that monk at the masquerade — he has done you more harm than can arise from your attach-

ment to Sir Francis Darrell. What business has a man under a mask to set about unsettling opinions established time out mind, and which never before disturbed your imagination? I cannot think with you that it was Mr. Godfrey; who has shown too much delicacy to have attempted any *perversion* in disguise. It was probably some man without any object, but that general one among some wits of ridiculing religion. But I hope you have not thought any more upon the subject. As for the mask in the black domino, I have no doubt it was Olivastro. I think Mr. Saville ought to have him taken up and sent out of the country.

Emily Dorrington has been to call me. I must, therefore, finish my letter, as I will not lose a post to let you know that I am here. If you write immediately, I may receive yours. We leave Paris in the end of next week. I have not time to speak of my journey. You are right, we stopped at Avignon — but I must say, it requires enthusiasm of some kind,

poetic or amorous, to give Vacluse its reputed charms.

Adieu, my dearest, dearest Augusta !  
give my love to my dear Mr. Saville, and  
your cousins ; and write directly to

Your most affectionate

ANGELICA.

## LETTER LXXX.

*Augusta to Angelica.*

Hanover Square, April 4.

HEAVEN be praised! I want you more than ever, my dearest Angelica, and Heaven be praised, you are come! I say you are come, for I will not stir without you, and, according to Mr. Dorrington's intentions, I may expect to embrace you before the middle of the month.

Oh! my dear sister! I have such a tale to tell you! How little did I foresee, when I dispatched my packet to Paris, what a dreadful story I was so soon to hear of Sir Francis Darrell! How little did I suspect the state into which my mind would be thrown before the

arrival of my sister ! Angelica ! my dear Angelica ! Your sister's peace of mind is lost. Poor man ! I no longer wonder that his has been so long lost. I cannot tell you his story : — I strive not to think of it — alas, I strive in vain — but I cannot tell it you : — you must read it as written by himself — or, rather, you had better be ignorant of it altogether. — Oh ! that I had never known it ! It includes — I cannot mention it. — The shock it gave me made me ill, and I was for several days confined to my room. Caroline felt it nearly as much as I did, and the distress of my father and George was beyond description, but they have all recovered themselves : — it is only your Augusta that continues to suffer, and my heart, Angelica, is in a sad, sad state. I strive to hide my feelings with the hope of saving those I love from pain, but I cannot altogether, and my father and my cousins are unhappy about me : — indeed I am afraid of myself, for I am very, very wretched. They are all against me ; and, what is worse, my own heart is against me. — It has betrayed me, Angelica, and the de-

nunciation of that unfortunate woman in her anonymous note is but too true : — it is lost, it is lost, my sister. But fear not, you know me — and it is because you know me, because you know the strength of my soul, that I scruple not to tell you that I no longer impose upon myself ; that I am conscious that I love. Some one has called love the sweetest of the passions — it may be — but I know it only as the bitterest. Hope may render it sweet — but to find, that I love a man whom I dare not, must not think of — Oh ! Angelica ! to what a degraded state am I fallen !

I cannot write at large, my dear sister ; but I must devote a few lines to apprise you of the situation in which you will find me. I think I told you that Sir Francis left town to avoid the poor woman who had eloped at the masquerade. On arriving at Belmont he resolved to communicate to us the causes of the unhappy life he had led : — his reason, he said, was, that his conscience told him he was receiving esteem and consi-

deration which could not be bestowed upon him if his story were known ; and the thought oppressed him beyond enduring. He owned he was anxious for the friendship he experienced among us, and would deserve it, but he was unknown, and therefore could not enjoy it. You remember, Angelica, the urn in the arbour at Grove Park : — the box in the pedestal contained a manuscript written by himself ; — it was his own story : — he sent it by Mr. Vernon to my father and George, with letters, in which he declared that he loved me, but hopelessly, and without any intention of courting me. I have told you the effect the manuscript had upon us.

He would probably have adhered to his resolution, had he not consented to let George show his story to the Bishop of \* \*, which produced a charming, delightful, soothing letter from him to Sir Francis himself, in which he absolves him ; and more, encourages him to court me. The Bishop's language, I thank God — I must thank God for it — restored him to a degree of self-consider-

ation : but, alas ! it also raised a hope that he might not be thought unworthy of my acceptance. He expressed this hope in a letter to me — a letter calculated to win the most obdurate heart. He had not to encounter obduracy in mine, Angelica, which was but too ready to confirm the Bishop's reasoning as to his unhappy story, the events of which had taken place when he was but a boy. My opposition to his wishes rests on grounds more difficult to be overcome ; reasons that I never can make give way to any earthly consideration or affection. I frankly assured him I never would marry any man from whose religious sentiments I was bound by a superior duty to differ. He then urged to be heard, promising that he never would endeavour to persuade me to an alteration of my sentiments, but hoped he might convince me, that thinking differently on religious points ought not to prevent a union of minds otherwise congenial ; he entreated for time and a hearing in such affecting terms, and my father and cousins urged me so warmly to comply with this request, that it was



impossible for me to refuse it. I repeated my opinion to him, but said I would see him soon at Grove Park. Thus, Angelica, am I situated. It will be a great struggle, I own; but I am resolved to conquer. Haste, my sister, to my assistance.

Unhappy as I am, I will not suffer my agitation so to absorb my other feelings as not to participate my dear Angelica's. I know you well, my sister. — I know that your heart will never be swayed by capricious passions. I am sure that if you resolve to accept Mr. Dartford it will be upon mature consideration, and upon a well-founded hope, that he is a good man, and consequently will be a good husband. My dear Marchese would not have spoken in his favour had he not observed and proved the change of his youthful airy disposition. Your mother would never have heard of him as a son. Indeed, I think the prospect good: his mother is a charming woman, and most highly respected in this country. My serious opinion is, that you should encourage the affection in your own

bosom, and let him see that he may gain your heart. — When he finds it too valuable a one to be inconsiderately bestowed, he will feel the attachment it merits, and constancy will be more delightful to him than change. Are the changes he made astonishing? Far from it. The woman that says at the first look, here is my heart for you, you shall have no trouble in proving your self worthy of it, — I will marry you in a fortnight — cannot but be a contemptible being, and Mr. Dartford, with all his eccentricity, has a great fund of good sense and virtue. Then, no such objection as that which has determined my lot in life, opposes hope and happiness. Yes, my dear Angelica, it is hope that renders love sweet. — You will be happy. — Oh! I weep as I say it. — My heart is not so good as I wished it to be — but it is not at your happiness I weep — it is at the rebellion of that heart, so instructed, so fortified, so cherished. — How truly was it said that the heart of man is deceitful above all things. — Does it even not deceive itself? But I *will* conquer it. Though

it has deceived me, it shall never make me blush.

Oh! Angelica! that mask haunts me! and, in spite of the improbability of it, my weak heart tells me that it was Sir Francis Darrell himself who personated that character. The object of his remarks, the gentleness of his manners, and I think now the tones of the voice, when he lowered it, combine to persuade me that it was with him I conversed that night. But this I must observe, that however his remarks may disturb my imagination, the effects were completely unconnected with any idea of their coming from his lips. And if it be true that they came from his lips, those lips can repeat them no more; for he has solemnly promised never to do it, and he has too much honour to break his word. But, nevertheless, come Angelica, come and assist your friend, who is determined to conquer her rebellious heart.

Your affectionate

AUGUSTA.

## LETTER LXXXI.

*Augusta to Caroline.*

Grove-Park, April.

MY DEAR CAROLINE,

I NEEDED not the deep impression of your parting words — “Remember to open your whole heart to me in your letters,” — to feel how truly you are entitled to my confidence. Your love is very dear to me, and I should ill deserve it were I capable of hiding from you the heart in which you have so warm a place. I wish it were more worthy of you, — but I believe you know it better than it knows itself. With respect to you, it has but one pain; it feels that it is debarred by a paramount duty from gratifying the wishes you have formed — but I know you will not love me the less for that. — Indeed I could not be happy

myself, nor make another happy with whom I differed so essentially. You know, my dear Caroline, that with us marriage is not considered as a mere earthly contract, but that it is a holy sacrament. How then can that sacrament be received by persons who have not the same opinion respecting it? The more you reflect, the more you will see the impropriety, to give it the lightest censure, of my encouraging a thought, either in myself or in Sir Francis Darrell, of such an union. You know how grateful I am to him, nor are you ignorant that I should readily endeavour to conquer any other objection to his wishes. But as it would be presumption in me to require a change of sentiment in him, a change too, that could do him no honour if made to gain an earthly object, I am sure you will not think me wrong in persisting in my resolution to advise, or rather entreat, him to relinquish a hope which is unattainable, without a mutual loss of esteem, and, what is still a sadder loss, of self-esteem. We are to see him to-morrow, and I will not close my letter

till our interview has taken place, that I may tell you the result.

The weather is very fine, and Grove-Park is beautiful : — Angelica is delighted. They have no such gardens in Italy as our English ones. I cannot tell you what a happiness it is to me to think that Angelica has found another sister in you.

I knew you would love her ; and the more you see of her, the more you will. What a comfort is she to me ! especially as you and I cannot but be sometimes separated. I wish as you do, that dear Mrs. Dartford may have the happiness of seeing her daughter, but I think she is perfectly right in putting her son's constancy to the test. If after some time spent in absence, and by him in the company of other ladies, he remains a loyal knight bound in her chains, she says she will take into consideration, whether she may promise to give him her hand in the course of the next seven years.

Are you in the secret, my dear Caroline, of the improvement which has been made at Grove-Park ? I suppose so. But is it setting me a good example to keep

me in the dark? You meant that I should be agreeably surprised. The motive was good, so I do not love you the less. It is indeed a great improvement, and certainly had become an indispensable one. The ground where the arbour stood is so completely transformed, that it is impossible to trace the spot on which that unhappy monument was erected. It is like enchantment. I agree with my father that he could not refuse Sir Francis's request to make the alteration.

I have seen Sir Francis, my dear Caroline, but nothing to the point has passed. His visit was to my father, at least he said so; but my father has told me that the fact is, he was too agitated, and begged not to be left alone with me. You know how expressive his countenance is, — I read his heart there. I am sure he was overpowered by the reflection of being with us for the first time after our perusal of his manuscript, and I am conscious that my painful feelings did not allow me to give him any assistance. I thought his looks reproached me with

cruelty. He said his next visit should be to me, and he hoped to-morrow. I will not detain my letter — I will write again. — Our united love to you and George. — Kiss little Caroline for us.

Your truly affectionate cousin,

**AUGUSTA SAVILLE.**



## LETTER LXXXII.

*Sir Francis Darrell to Mr. Vernon.*

Belmont, April

I HAVE at length seen her once more, and since the communication of my story. I went over to Grove-Park resolved to see her alone, and use all my powers of argument and entreaty to prevail, at least so far as to take time to consider the only point on which my happiness depended. Her religious opinions I had previously implicitly conceded to her. But before I arrived at the house, recollecting the day which we had there passed in the autumn, the interview in the bower, her having perused the memorial which had lain there concealed for years, I felt myself completely unmanned — I trembled as I alighted — I could not bear to fix my eyes upon her. — I clung to Saville lest he should leave me, and, unable to

recover myself, I begged permission to see her to-morrow, which was granted with a forced smile, in which lurked any thing but joy and happiness. I see she pities me—I even fancy she is sorry that she cannot love me.—I am no longer her preserver.—I fear I am the destroyer of her peace. When I have seen her again I will write to you if I can.

Your affectionate friend,

F. DARRELL.

FRANCIS DARRELL.

## LETTER LXXXIII.

*Caroline to Augusta.*

Woodlee, April.

I THANK you, my dear cousin, for your charming letter. I wanted no proof of the ingenuousness of your mind, when I desired you to open your whole heart to me. The expression arose from my reflecting that you were going to decide the fate of a man, in whom we all take so great an interest, and to whom you cannot but be greatly attached. Poor fellow! how I feel for him! What a noble mind has been lost for years! for nearly ten, I believe; from the time he was seventeen years old — owing to events, awful undoubtedly, but such as George says ought to be forgotten. All that fairly can be laid to his charge, however, is not to be wondered at in the situation in which he was placed,

and his sufferings since are but a proof of his exquisite sensibility : and whatever life may have been attributed to him, or, in fact, he may have led, of one thing he spurns the accusation — that of corrupting our sex ; and George assures me, that he believes he has never been the cause of unhappiness to any man. Amiable young man ! My heart bleeds for you ; and, could I decide, my charming Augusta should be your prize and compensation. To think, my dear Augusta, that the healing of his wounded spirit should at last depend upon one so circumstanced, that he must be left at six-and-twenty to the melancholy reflection, that Providence has deserted him in this life, and that the remainder of his must be passed unblest, un comforted ! Well ! I will not say a word against your religion ; but can it require, after such sufferings and repentance, after such acknowledged virtues, and a heart devoted to you, that you should doom him to a long life of misery ? For is not unrequited love, misery ? But I have done, my sweet cousin. I will plead his cause

no more, though I must share his disappointment. \*

Woodlee is full. — You ought to have been with us: — you are enquired for and missed. Lady Mount-Vernon loves you and talks of you daily — her Lord and Lady Bab have no objection to you; and I think Mrs. Dartford rivals Lady Mount-Vernon in your praises. Mr. Vernon and Mr. Dartford are also here, and to these you may add Mr., Mrs. and Miss Dorrington. I have a great secret for you. — Mr. Vernon has lost his heart; and Miss Dorrington has gained it: — she is a very sweet girl — and I will say he is a very amiable and excellent young man. — I once trembled for him — I thought he stood upon a precipice: — he has fully regained my esteem, and I will do every thing in my power to promote his happiness with Miss Dorrington. I am pleased with Mr. Dartford; but pray tell Angelica that he talks to me a little too much of her, which she will allow is very ungallant.

I was let into the secret of the alteration at Grove Park, on condition of pre-

serving it, that you might have the unexpected pleasure of seeing the improvement before you heard of it. — At the request of my uncle and George, those melancholy memorials are destroyed; and Sir Francis — but I will not resume the topic — I have not time at present. God bless you, my dear Augusta; say all that is kind to my uncle and Angelica — and when you see Miss Craven remember me to her.

Your most affectionate

CAROLINE GODFREY.

P. S. Your little Caroline sends kisses for you all.

## LETTER LXXXIV.

*Mr. Vernon to Sir Francis Darrell.*

Woodlee. April.

MY DEAR DARRELL,

I CONCEIVE your agitation, and your trembling — I too have some novel agitation, but I do not tremble either for you or myself. Your Augusta's heart is not stone : — do not despond, even if she holds out during the recess — be assured she will not hold out much longer. — Keep up your spirits, and resolve to come to town after her. Mrs. Godfrey is your staunch ally, so is Godfrey. Her father wishes your cause well — and all the force she brings against this is that you are not a Roman Catholic. Where is there any cause for despair? I wish both you and she were here, among people that love you both!

The Godfreys have assembled a delightful party to spend a fortnight here.— There are my mother and sister, with Lady Barbara, John Dartford and his mother, and Mr. Dorrington's family. — Rufus attempted to join us, but he has completely ousted himself. — He has lately been uniting sin and religion so barefacedly, that even I am astounded.— Since our arrival, he has ogled Mrs. Godfrey with such plain transfusions, that she took him to task; and he has this day been summoned before a magistrate at Alton by his virtuous cook, Mrs. Martha, who last year lent her petticoat to Venus. He comes no more here, and I think you have had enough of him; so let him go.

There is a pretty girl here, Darrell, who has *smitten* me. — I know this intelligence will please you. She is not only pretty, but lively, and likes my humour. She would just be the thing for me, if she had a fortune, and that her father is able to give her, and a plum too. — Seriously, though I think fortune a necessary consideration in matrimony, I would as soon go



to *La Trappe*, as marry a woman for her money. Well ! and the lady's name? Emily Dorrington. — She is very young — just turned of sixteen, but her father and mother are kind and reasonable people, and I shall not object to taking her as many months under seventeen as they please. I shall leave off writing to go and play billiards with her ; I am teaching her, and you don't know how she likes to be taught.

You take no notice, but I don't wonder at it, of Miss Saville's friend Signorina Pisani — she is a charming girl — I hope she will not prove your enemy. — And pray do you know any thing of Olivastro? I have lost sight of him — he spoke warmly of you, but altogether he is a gloomy creature.

Ever yours,

L. VERNON.

## LETTER LXXXV.

*Augusta to Caroline.*

Grove-Park. April.

MY DEAR, DEAR CAROLINE.

YOU should support me instead of employing all your power against me. How could I withstand such a letter as yours, were it not for the influence of the principle that sustains me? I have told you, my dearest cousin, that my heart is not obdurate. Think you *my* heart does not bleed for him too? I have too much to combat against, and here now has Angelica, on whom I so much depended for assistance, deserted me, and become as strong an advocate as yourself for Sir Francis Darrell. — She talks of the power of a dispensation, as if it were not principally on our consciousness of right and wrong that we should act. — What power

on earth can dispense with our attention to that ?

I have again seen him, Caroline ; he has pleaded with all the eloquence he is master of, and he has left my heart bleeding. You see I open the whole of it to you. When he came this morning, he was still too agitated to undertake the cause he came to plead, and I hoped to make him more tranquil, by leaving him a short time alone with Angelica. My father was purposely absent ; and, when Angelica was about to quit the room, I requested her to stay till I returned, trusting that she would employ the time in preparing his mind for the necessary decision I was about to declare to him. On my return, I found him agitated, but by a different cause ; joy sparkled in his eye — he exclaimed :

“ I have found a friend — Oh such a friend ! speak, Madam, speak for me, I beseech you.”

In a quarter of an hour he had so completely gained Angelica's good wishes, that she had furnished him with arguments, and had absolutely advised him

to urge the dispensing power of the Pope.

"It is true," said I, "that many Catholics have recourse to such a power, but is not there a God in every body's breast, which says that duty cannot be dispensed with?"

"My love," said Angelica, "are you a Catholic?"

I blushed at what I had said — Sir Francis eyed me as if he meant to penetrate into my very soul. He said diffidently, and slowly, because he was aware that his observation encroached upon the promise he had given me, "Is not such a power inherent in the Pope?"

"I presume," replied I, blushing still more deeply, "that he possesses such a power."

"It is one I do not wish to deny," cried he, "on the contrary, it is my utmost wish to submit to it. Think, I beseech you, think of it. I ask but the privileges of your own communion. — Shall I not always respect and revere that power which from the most miserable of men shall make me the happiest?"

"Sir Francis," replied I, "I presume not to encounter in reasoning the powers of your understanding ; but there is a something within my breast which informs me that a woman acts essentially wrong, who maintains different principles from a man whom she is bound to obey. That something is consciousness ; it is the God I alluded to ; and I trust it is not impious to call it so, as I imagine the Almighty acts in that manner upon his creatures."

"Will you not be displeased with me," said he, "if I say that your God in the breast influences you on a point most unfortunate for me, when the Pope's power would be in my favour ?"

"I confess," replied I, "that between you and Angelica, you have bewildered my thoughts, and I shall now beg the favour of you to give me a little time to recover them. Will you allow the subject to drop at present, and I will renew it to-morrow, if you please ?"

"I obey," said he, "but for your consideration at the same time, will you per-

mit me to add one argument which appears to me very strong."

I bowed.

"Though you differ," continued he, "on the same principles, with your father and your cousins, yet you live with them in harmony and love."

This observation was very striking, and I did not attempt to answer it at the moment, but it was agreed that we should resume the subject to-morrow.—Angelica did not leave us—we went into the garden, and, after conversing for some time, particularly with her, he took leave, appointing to meet us at a spot in the garden, which you may remember by the long bench on the lawn, screened from the house by a small grove of lilacs.

I was extremely surprised at Angelica's conduct, and expostulated with her on it. She replied, "that she had been considering all the circumstances respecting Sir Francis, and though she could have wished him of our communion, she really could not think, upon reflection, that I should do wrong in availing

myself of a dispensation. When I observed to her that there was an extraordinary change in her mind, she said that she had not made a proper estimate of the value of such a man; and that she was not without hope of his uniting himself through me to the Church of Rome. Angelica has certainly been fascinated either by him or by you. — But what I did not yield to you, I cannot yield to her; and, after some examination of my own mind, I have resolved to adhere to my principle.

Your secret respecting Mr. Vernon has given me very great pleasure indeed; he has always been a great favourite of mine: — he has a disposition formed to be happy, and most truly do I wish him so. At another time I could have enjoyed the company now with you at Woodlee: — in the present state of my mind I can enjoy nothing; my duty and my feelings are at war, but indeed Caroline the former must conquer.

You see how completely open my heart is to you. To-morrow I decide my own lot for life: — Sir Francis, pos-

sessed as he is of such great delicacy, will no doubt leave this neighbourhood for some time, in which case I will enjoy here some weeks of solitude with my dear Angelica, who, in spite of this amiable desertion of hers, is a real comfort to my heart, and not the less so, Caroline, that she is Sir Francis Darrell's friend. Should he, contrary to my expectation, persist in his suit, and remain at Belmont, I shall beg my father to send us to Hanover Square, where, if so, you will join us in the course of next week.

Adieu, my dearest cousin: — I own I have a heavy heart, but it is a resolute one on occasions like the present; — to-morrow — I hope he will not feel it too much — but to-morrow he must be answered.

Your truly affectionate cousin,

AUGUSTA SAVILLE.



## LETTER LXXXVI.

*Mr. Saville to Mr. Godfrey.*

(By Express.)

HASTEN to me I beseech you, George, and bring Caroline immediately to Augusta. How shall I tell you what has happened? Darrell is assassinated: he is here, and the surgeon and the physician from Peterborough, who have examined his wound, are of opinion it is mortal. I have sent express to London for Geach. Call in your way, and bring him if he has not already left town, and any other skilful surgeon. If he lives through the day I shall hope that he is not mortally wounded. The assassin is Olivastro, who has put an end to his own existence also. — Wretched man! he is gone to answer for the crime. Augusta

raves, and calls upon Darrell, as if she were his murderer — and as if she were his wife. It is impossible for me to tell you any more at present : — we are all in a state of distraction.

**GILBERT SAVILLE.**

## LETTER LXXXVII.

*Mr. Vernon to Mr. Godfrey.*

(By Express.)

Grove-Park. April.

MY DEAR GODFREY,

AFTER travelling all night, I am this moment arrived. Darrell is still alive: — neither Geach nor Haverthwait can give a decided opinion: — he has come to himself once; they say he will again, but he suffers excruciating pain. By some movement of Darrell's, the villain missed his heart, and the poignard took a direction in which it has probably passed without touching the vital parts: — this is not very sure, but it appears that the greatest fear is from the inflammation which has taken place. On read-

ing your letter, your uncle thinks you have done right in concealing this horrible event from Mrs. Godfrey for the present. I can give you no detail of it ; indeed I can collect none, nor can attempt to get any. I cannot tell you how I am shocked at the sight of my friend ; and your cousin is, if possible, in a worse state : — Miss Pisani, with rather more presence of mind, never leaves her. Mr. Saville walks distractedly about ; now in the room where Darrell lies ; now in the chamber where his daughter sits in distracted silence, or raves for Darrell. She repeats often to herself : —

“ I will never believe it, I will never believe it : — give him to me ; he is mine.”

She has not been in bed since the event. The physician from Peterborough has ordered a medicine to compose her to sleep : — God grant it may recall her senses.

I will dispatch another express to-morrow : — let your servant be upon the watch to prevent Mrs. Godfrey hearing any thing. Olivastro's body is re-

moved to the public-house, and an inquest is to be held upon it to-morrow. I fear Miss Pisani will be compelled to appear as a witness, as she was upon the spot when the assassin appeared. She says, if she could but see her sister restored to her recollection, she should not mind going to give her evidence.

The man is ready : — I will, if I can, write a few lines by the post to say, that the business Darrell wanted me upon will detain me some time : — this will satisfy Mrs. Godfrey as to my abrupt departure and absence, when I was engaged to spend the whole recess at Woodlee.

Yours ever,

L. VERNON.

Monday.

## LETTER LXXXVIII.

*Mr. Vernon to Mr. Godfrey.*

I TREMBLE lest by accident Mrs. Godfrey should become acquainted with the contents of the expresses I dispatch. This has been a dreadful day:—I thought my heart was firmer than I find it. I know not how I shall support myself. I expect this will be the last of Darrell's days on earth. He came to himself this morning; and the scenes I have witnessed have so overcome me, that I do not think I can relate them to you;—but I will try while he remains in another stupor brought on by the medicine which has been given to mitigate the agony of sensation.

I fear I shall confuse the account:—I will begin by speaking of your cousin. The physician said he hoped she would

wake composed, and in her senses, and requested that her father might not be with her at the time, or any appearance of distress be shown. Care was therefore taken to prevent it; but through the night her friend watched by her bed-side. It happened as the doctor foresaw: — when she moved, Miss Pisani, as directed, spoke to her, and asked why she had slept so long: — she did not immediately understand, but closed her eyes in heaviness. In a short time she spoke, and asked Miss Pisani why she had come into her chamber.

“To enquire,” said she, “why you sleep so long.”

“Good God! Angelica,” said she, “have I been dreaming? I still tremble all over: — it cannot be,” continued she, coming more to her recollection — “it cannot have been a dream. — Is Sir Francis Darrell in the house?”

Miss Pisani, endeavouring to favour the notion of a dream, said:

“What are you talking of? You are not awake yet — it is too early to expect him.”

"Angelica," replied she, "my head is confused, but this cannot have been a dream — no, no; I saw him murdered."

Fortunately her imagination took a different turn, and, instead of wildness, produced a flood of tears. She then seized her friend's hand, and implored her to tell her if Darrell was alive.

Finding the impossibility of persuading her that it was a dream, Miss Pisani thought it best to say,

"Compose yourself, and I will tell you that he is alive."

"But is it true?" cried she.

"It is indeed," replied her friend.

"Oh! say upon your honour that it is true."

"It is, upon my honour."

"Where is he?"

"I have said enough," answered her comforter, "to satisfy you for the present, and you owe it to me to moderate your feelings. Sir Francis is in the house, and, if he hears of your agitation, it may be of very serious consequence to him."



Here, Miss Pisani says, she clasped her hands, directed her eyes to heaven; as if praying, then burst again into tears, and hid her face on her pillow.

While Miss Pisani was thus occupied with your cousin, I was at Darrell's bedside wretched and hopeless. The surgeons would not say that his wound was mortal, but on the other hand, when I pressed for their candid opinion, they acknowledged their fears — if he lasted through this day, and the pain subsided by degrees, there would then be a hope.

It was about ten o'clock when he came to himself, but in pain. He knew me, pressed my hand, and writhing with agony, said :

“Vernon, where is she?”

I told him that the doctors had relieved her agitation by medicines, and that she was at present in bed, where her friend was paying her attention.

“Vernon,” said he, “I could have met death better two days ago, but to be cut off at the moment when hope began to spread its charm upon my heart — I fear I loved her too much ; — I

thought but of her. Oh ! it was idolatry : — my punishment is just : — I must die, my dear Vernon ; — will not that be sufficient expiation ? And may I not, without aggravation of my error, ask to see her once more ?”

I begged him to call all his fortitude to his assistance in the trial that awaited him in such a case. “ But, Darrell,” added I, “ the surgeons have not pronounced the wound mortal.”

“ Do not,” replied he, “ try to flatter yourself or me ; and, indeed, were there the slightest hope, this longing of my heart to see her once more would destroy it, if it is determined that we are not to meet again.”

“ No,” said Saville, who had come into the room and heard the latter part of our conversation — “ no such determination is made : — you *shall* see her, and I trust in God you will live to make her happy.”

Overcome with tenderness, he put out his hand to your uncle, who went close to him, when he placed his arm about his neck and wept without speaking. A

short silence took place : — he then desired the surgeons might be called to him. He shook hands with them, and begged them to tell him truly how long they thought he had to live. They said that they could not answer him, for they had not even despaired of his life.

"Be candid," said he, "I care not for death, but I want a little time : — you know me to be in immediate danger?"

"So much," said Haverthwait, "that I advise you not to delay the settlement of your affairs ; in other respects I would have you hope."

"I thank you," said he ; "that is enough. I have no affairs to settle, and my will is already made."

They now examined the state of his wound, and dressed it. He writhed a good deal, but bore it well.

During this operation Mr. Saville had gone out, and, as I afterwards learned from him, for the purpose of preparing your cousin to see Darrell. He found her composed beyond his expectation, and sitting at a table writing. Your uncle, without dissembling the danger, endeavoured to lessen the fear of it.

When he mentioned Darrell's desire, she suddenly rose, as if to comply immediately ; but, hearing that the surgeons were with him, she sat down again. How will you be surprized to hear, that she now proposed to her father to become Darrell's wife immediately ! Lovely, angelic woman ! But this is no time to indulge in raptures. To enable you to understand this unexpected change in her resolution, I must give you some previous information, which I have learned from your uncle and Miss Pisani.

Firmly resolved as she has been to let no worldly temptation interfere with her religion, her mind has nevertheless been agitated on the subject for some time past, without the slightest reference to Darrell, though it is very extraordinary that he was, unknown to her, the original cause of the reflections which created that agitation. You will remember at the masquerade a mask in the dress of a monk. It was Darrell, who, in a humorous manner, laid open to her the absurdity of thinking all her friends doomed to eternal misery, for no other reason,

but because they were not Roman Catholics. The absurdity had, in a certain degree, molested her peace ever since; but she thought it her duty not to reason on the point, and she had completely made up her mind not to marry a Protestant. You know she came down to Grove Park with a resolution not to accept of Darrell; but it so happened that Miss Pisani, who was much pleased with him, advised her to have recourse to a dispensation. This again proved its own absurdity. She took time to consider of it, and the issue was that she resolved not to put her own understanding in competition with what she esteemed the wisdom of ages; and she went with her friend to meet Darrell at an appointed place in the garden.

They were standing together near some lilacs, when a scream from Miss Pisani made Darrell turn, at the very moment the villain aimed his blow. His blood gushed out — he fell, crying out:

“ Oh! Augusta, my Augusta! Say that my soul is not eternally lost.”

“ I will never believe it lost,” cried

she, and fainted. Miss Pisani's cries brought assistance, and they were both conveyed senseless into the house. Since then she has, as I told you, perpetually repeated in her raving, that she *would never believe it*. On her recovering her senses this morning, and ascertaining Darrell's danger, she dressed herself, and passed some time with considerable calmness in meditating and writing. She was still so occupied, when her father went to her. She informed him of the state of her mind, and gave her reasons for abjuring the Roman faith altogether, concluding with the proposal I have mentioned. As I never leave Darrell, I was with him when Mr. Saville returned. He held a paper in his hand; "Darrell," said he, "I have brought what will, I trust, do more in healing your wound, than the most consummate skill:—my friend, Augusta is yours."

"Oh!" cried Darrell, "it is too much. You make me a coward: you make me dread death."

Here your uncle put the paper into my hand to read out. It was addressed to

Darrell, and the contents are what I shall now copy :

“ With much effort, my truly loved friend, I have raised my mind to a degree of composure and strength, which enables me to address you, and to assure you, that, in life or death, I am resolved to be yours. But in declaring this, let me not lose your esteem. I have not been swayed by earthly considerations. I love you, indeed, more than I can express, and I have loved you longer than I have been myself aware of; yet, great as I know my affection to be, never would it have prevailed with me to abandon the duty I owe to God. I abjure my former opinions, not because I love you, but because, on reflection, I think those opinions attributed to the Almighty a WILL that cannot be his. Shall *your* soul be lost for ever, after what it has accomplished? I would sooner believe virtue a mockery, and the evil Spirit the supreme Power. This is enough for me, but there are also other points, which now appear to me inconsistent with God’s

goodness. I cannot dwell upon them. I said, I would never be the wife of a man, with whom I differed in religious principles. If you live — how I have prayed for your being spared to me, God knows — I will place myself under your guidance, in the pursuit of true religion. I am sure you will lead me right; but, if I have the misfortune to lose you, I will take the instruction of enlightened men; I will learn of my father, my cousin, and of our good Bishop. There may be, there are I am sure, some excellent principles in the Roman Catholic faith, but my attachment to the whole has led me into a fatal error, one that prevented my being yours in time to avert the horror of this moment. - I therefore abjure it entirely, and will adopt that which you will lead me to. And now let me tell you that I consider myself as your wife, and that the only comfort I can have is to be permitted to perform the duties of a wife in attendance upon you. If the Almighty grant my prayer, love and duty shall combine to make you happy through life; if it is his will to deny it,



Darrell was silent, but his look supplicated, and your uncle is now going off in a chaise with four horsès, meaning to travel all night, with a hope of being back to-morrow evening. Instead of an express, as I intended, I shall send this by him to be forwarded from London. I will continue what I have yet to relate in another letter, which shall be dispatched on the return of Mr. Saville.

Ever yours,

L. VERNON.

Tuesday.

## LETTER LXXXIX.

*Mr. Vernon to Mr. Godfrey.*

(By Express.)

Wednesday.

DARRELL continues suffering; there is no alteration for the better, but I may also say that there is nothing more threatening. I will continue the subject of yesterday, and I have a very surprising story to tell you, which came out before the coroner; but I must first say a few words of Darrell and his Augusta.

While the clergyman was preparing for the communion service, Miss Saville asked if she might be admitted. She went forward to him, and gave him her hand, which he kissed. "I have been thinking," said she to him, "of confession. It is one of the sacraments of the church of Rome. At Signa I had an excellent

man for a confessor : his instructions were all calculated to produce piety and virtue, and he was by no means rigid. I shall always venerate and love him. Such a friend is an honour in any religion, and a great comfort to those who need one ; but few confessors are like him, and the manner in which confession is made among the lower classes of people justifies, perhaps, the ridicule that is often thrown upon it : as for me, I am convinced, that the general confession of the heart to its Maker is the genuine principle of religion. The minister may absolve, but the confession should be to God. I have been communing with my own heart, and I am prepared to take the sacrament with you as your betrothed wife."

He still held her hand, which he again kissed, but I saw he was suffering acutely, and I advised an immediate attention to the ceremony. I have not words to express my admiration of your cousin. They both, with unaffected piety, received the sacrament. When it was over, she went and took his hand, and, observing

perspiration on his brow, wiped it away with her handkerchief. He was now so agonized, that the doctors thought it proper to procure relief by stupor, and they accordingly gave him a medicine that would produce it.

I have now to relate what, in point of time, preceded the circumstances of which I have given you an account. Providence, sooner or later, overtakes the guilty. I told you, that an inquest was to be held at the public-house on Olivastro's body. The day before yesterday, after I had dispatched my express, we were surprised at the appearance of officers of justice, who came to arrest your cousin's maid. They asked to speak with Mr. Saville, and told him that the Italian woman was implicated in the murder. Madelena was called and questioned by Mr. Saville as to her knowledge of Olivastro being in the neighbourhood. She denied any communication with him, and Mr. Saville would have answered for her appearance, but the officers could not consent to it, and she was taken into custody.

The inquest was held the next morning, yesterday at nine o'clock ; at which hour your uncle went to the public-house with Miss Pisani to state the circumstances that took place at Grove Park, and to release Madelena. But guess their astonishment, when a letter was produced in Italian, written in her hand, though not subscribed by her, informing Olivastro of Darrell's appointment with Miss Saville. She did not know the letter was in the coroner's possession till it was produced ; the effect the sight of it had upon her was enough to convict her of guilt. She turned as pale as death ; looked confounded, and could say nothing in reply to the questions put to her. At last she said, that if Mr. Saville would be her friend, and obtain her pardon, she would speak, and make discoveries that would astonish him. She was told, that a true and full confession of all she knew was the only way to obtain mercy, and that interest would be made for her according to her conduct at present. Upon this she made the following extraordinary disclosure :

“ That it was through the means of the Count d'Olivastro she had been placed in the service of Miss Saville : that she was in the pay of the Count, who, being in love with her mistress, exacted of her a minute account of all her actions, her lovers, and her friends : that he occasionally made her presents when she gave him any particular information which he was anxious to have : that she had given him notice of her departure from Florence for Paris : — that he employed her in conjunction with persons of the name of Gaza to assist him in carrying her mistress away from Paris, meaning to take her into Germany, and to marry her with or without her consent by means of bribery ; hoping, that, finding she could not do otherwise, she would consent to live with him as his wife : that the plan was laid at Gaza's house in Paris : that to prevent the Gazas from being suspected, her mistress was not to be pressed to take any refreshment at their house, but that she (the maid) was to find an opportunity of giving her mistress some *banbons*, in which

was mixed up the drug that was to cause sleep — that she gave them to her mistress as they were going to Gaza's, when she stopped at a confectioner's to buy *bonbons* for Gaza's children; that she prevailed upon her to eat enough on the way; — that Gaza's wife was upon her guard, and substituted other *bonbons* for the children; — that Gaza had calculated the time of the drug's producing its effect, and that his wife had contrived to detain her mistress till that was nearly taking place, when Gaza and two of his friends followed her: that, when her mistress had passed through the garden of the Tuilleries, they put her falling asleep into a carriage; and, having taken the necessary means, carried her out of Paris towards Poissy, where they were to meet Count d'Olivastro: that, as for herself, she staid all night at Gaza's, and went back to Mr. Saville's hotel the next morning, with a pretended story, which was credited: that Gaza and his two friends placed her mistress asleep in what they thought a safe place, under the care of a woman, and went on to Poissy to

refresh themselves, and receive further instructions from the Count: that the woman knowing Miss Saville would not wake for some time, and the cottage being in an out-of-the-way place, had gone upon some errand of her own: — that the person whom Sir Francis had shot was Olivastro himself in disguise: that he fled immediately for fear of the police, and that Gaza and his friends returned to Paris, and were never suspected: that on Count d'Olivastro's coming to England, he again engaged her to assist him in any plan he might adopt: — that she had given him a description of Grove-Park: that he had reconnoitred both that and Belmont, but that he had never been able to form any new plan to carry off her mistress: that she knew he was in the neighbourhood, and had promised to inform him when Sir Francis came to see her mistress, but that she did not know that his intention was to assassinate him."

Such is the confession of this wretched young woman, whom gain has tempted to all this wickedness. She is committed



to prison. It is clear to me that Olivastro intended some new act of violence, but had not long premeditated the one he executed, which seems to have been the immediate effect of jealousy. It being impossible to keep these circumstances from your cousin, Miss Pisani made her acquainted with them, but they produced little effect upon her, her whole mind being absorbed in the danger of Darrell. She never quits him. The man is ready — I will not wait for Mr. Saville's return.

Ever yours,

L. VERNON.

## LETTER XC.

*Mr. Vernon to Mr. Godfrey.*

(By Express.)

Thursday.

WHAT a painful task is mine, my dear Godfrey! But, having undertaken it, I will go through with it. Your cousin is Lady Darrell, but I fear I must add— Oh God! Oh God! I ~~am~~ in the room with them — but whether he be alive or dead I know not. I have left his couch — he is in her arms — her father standing by. — Haverthwait is seeking for a pulse in vain — I cannot write.

\* \* \* \* \*

It lasts long, if it be but a swoon, as they think. I have come out of the room

to write, that my letter may be ready for the express. My heart is so heavy, and my head so bewildered, that I know not how to relate what has passed. I will do what I can, but the task is indeed dreadful.

Darrell remained long in an insensible doze. — When he opened his eyes he saw Miss Saville at his bedside ; — he smiled, and said — “ I shall not die, while an angel watches my life.” To her enquiries he replied that he was not in such great pain as he had been, but that he was faint. The surgeons were called in, and they requested earnestly that he might be kept quiet. It was time to examine and dress the wound, and your cousin joined her friend, Miss Pisani, who is, as you may well imagine, in a very unhappy state. You know how amiable she is. Her attachment to Miss Saville is completely that of a sister.

Your uncle was very fortunate in getting to town in time to procure the license the very next morning ; but with all his expedition, and he took no sleep but in the chaise, he did not arrive here

till after midnight. Darrell was dozing; his destined bride also, by a little artifice in which Miss Pisani assisted, was asleep. The surgeons had said there was no change that indicated immediate danger. Thus circumstanced, I compelled Mr. Saville to go to bed, promising to call him if Darrell asked for him, and at all events before eight o'clock. I sat up with the nurse, but took some sleep in an easy chair, which has been my only bed since I arrived at Grove-Park.

About seven in the morning Darrell asked if Mr. Saville was returned. On being informed that he was, he said,

“What day is this?”

I told him, Thursday, the sixteenth of April.

He paused a little; then, putting out his hand to me, and pressing mine, he said,

“God bless you, Vernon! This is indeed an April-day — there will be sunshine and rain: I am easier, but I am faint. — Has Mr. Saville the license?”

I said, he had.

"Do not," continued he, "let the ceremony be delayed to a late hour in the morning. The vicar holds himself in readiness."

"Shall it be immediately?" said I.

"Saville needs rest," replied he:—"but not later than nine o'clock—I grow fainter and fainter every hour."

I promised to pay attention to his wish, and he resumed his silence. I immediately dispatched a note to the vicar, appointing him to be with us at half-past eight; and I sent for the housekeeper from Belmont to be present. At eight I called your uncle myself. The surgeons attended to the wound, and, for the first time, said that it had a favourable appearance, all inflammation having subsided. But Darrell shook his head. When they had finished, he begged to be moved in his morning-gown to a large couch that stood in the room, and wished that the chamber might be aired. It was allowed to be done according to his desire. He was gently removed, and suffered less than I expected. His man, Morris, managed it with great tenderness. The

bed was made, and the chamber put in order for the ceremony that was about to take place.

At the time appointed the vicar came. Mr. Saville received him, and presented the licence. The surgeons were invited to witness the ceremony; Morris and the housekeeper were desired to attend; the nurse took her station with them. A little before nine the vicar entered the room, followed by your cousin, her friend, and Mr. Saville. So melancholy a bride, or so mournful a marriage, was never known before; yet both bride and bridegroom seemed to have determined that the mourning should be inward. She wore a loose simple cambric robe, gathered at her waist by a white ribbon; he was wrapped in a silk gown: — the morning was fine, and a gentle light was admitted into the room. The vicar performed his duty — it was a most affecting ceremony; — not an eye in the chamber but was filled with tears, except those of the bride and bridegroom: — they looked at each other seriously, but as if they thought they were leaving this world behind

them. As the clergyman was concluding, Darrell's countenance underwent a change — his wife turned and clasped him to her bosóm — he feebly put his arms about her neck, and whispered, "I die happy," and fell back on the couch.

\* \* \* \* \*

That the ways of Providence are inscrutable is one of the earliest sayings we learn. As we grow up, most of us take it for granted, and give ourselves no trouble in the scrutiny. The words chance and accident are perpetually in our mouths; and, if we thank God, it is with an habitual lip-phrase. Coincidences and analogous events in moral history, and retributive justice escape our notice, or merely excite our wonder; and Providence, though at our hand, is the last agent we look to for explanation. My mind has been turned to this subject by the correspondence and conversation of my friend for some time past, and we have together taken pleasure in tracing, both in public and private life, the hand

of that Being whom, formerly, we scrupled not to insult, for having limited the boundaries of knowledge. In Darrell's life I trace it everywhere—I cannot trace it in his death. He had expiated—the reasoning of your friend the Bishop of \* \* was convincing; and, though Darrell's fears and self-disapprobation blinded him, I saw that hand leading him to happiness. In the events of his wife's life, I can also trace it; but I lose it again in her widowhood, and I am obliged to rest in ignorance in this world, looking to another for the clue. Well, my dear Godfrey, I am content to wait, and for this resignation of my pride I am indebted to Darrell.

\* \* \* \* \*

He lives, Godfrey!—my friend still lives:—It was but a swoon. Rejoice, rejoice! and you may now proclaim it to Mrs. Godfrey, and to all our friends:—He is preserved to us—he lives to bless and be blest. It *was* but a swoon, the consequence of the low state in



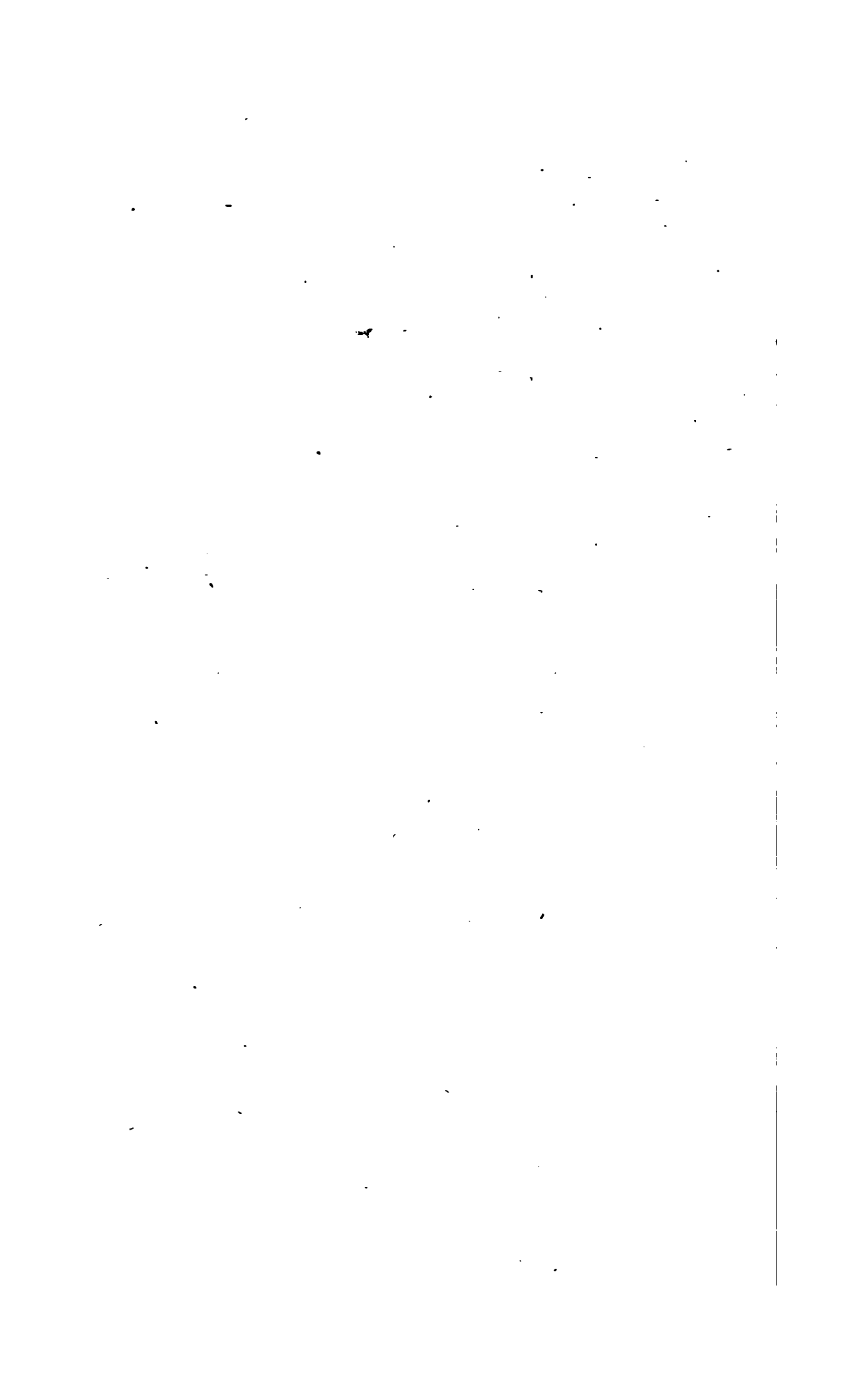
which the doctors have kept him to counteract the effects of inflammation. They have saved him by it, and Providence is again clear to my view. Even in Olivastro's dagger I see his hand : — that dagger has accelerated Darrell's happiness ; it has hastened the conviction of his wife's mind, and completed her to his heart's content. I left them folded in each other's arms, and their father weeping over them for joy. — But joy too is dangerous at times, and at the desire of the doctors I must go and counteract it. To you I send it unbounded — Joy, joy to you all ! Tell Mrs. Dartford that time is pregnant with merrier weddings, but meanwhile we will soon meet to celebrate the happy marriage of Sir Francis and Lady Darrell !

LEWIS VERNON.

## NOTE.

The Author intended to finish the Novel with the death of Sir Francis, and the moral reflections of Mr. Vernon; and he thinks religious justice, if he may use the expression, would be satisfied; but at the request of a friend, and in obedience to what he believes to be poetical justice, he added the concluding passage.

THE END.



## POPULAR NOVELS

PUBLISHED BY

LONGMAN, HURST, REES, ORME, AND BROWN,

PATERNOSTER-ROW.

---

LIONEL, or THE LAST OF THE PEVENSEYS. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 11. 1s. Boards.

THE PHYSIOGNOMIST. A Novel. By the Author of the Bachelor and the Married Man. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 16s. 6d. Boards.

OAKWOOD HALL. A Novel. Including a Description of the Lakes of Cumberland and Westmorland, and a part of South Wales. By CATHERINE HUTTON, Author of the Miser Married, and the Welsh Mountaineer. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 16s. 6d. Boards.

CORRECTION. A Novel. 2d Edition. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 11. 1s. Boards.

"The seducing images of luxury, of splendour, and of homages, of power and independence, are too seldom counteracted by the only preservative — a religious education. The world is too generally entered upon as a scene of pleasure instead of trial, as a theatre of amusement, not action." — *Hannah More*.

The BACHELOR and the MARRIED MAN: or, the Equilibrium of the "BALANCE of COMFORT." A Novel. The 2d Edition. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 16s. 6d. Boards.

NORTHERN IRISH TALES; founded on Facts. By J. Gamble, Esq. Author of Views of Society and Manners in the North of Ireland, Sarsfield, &c. In 2 Vols. 12mo. Price 12s. Boards.

*Popular Novels published by Longman & Co.*

**SOPHIA ; or, the DANGEROUS INDISCRETION.** A Tale, founded on Facts. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 16s. 6d. Boards.

**THE KNIGHT OF ST. JOHN.** A Romance. By Miss ANNA MARIA PORTER, Author of the Recluse of Norway, &c. &c. &c. 3d Edition. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 11. 1s. Boards.

**MODERN MANNERS ; or, a SEASON at HARROWGATE.** In 2 Vols. 12mo. 12s. Boards.

**ROB ROY.** A Novel. In 3 Vols. By the Author of Waverley, &c. 3d Edit. 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 11. 4s. Boards.

**THE PASTOR'S FIRESIDE.** A Novel. By Miss JANE PORTER, Author of Thaddeus of Warsaw, and Scottish Chiefs. The 2d Edit. In 4 Vols. 12mo. Price 11. 11s. 6d. Boards.

**VALENTINE'S EVE.** A Novel. By Mrs. OPIE. In 3 Vols. 12mo. 2d Edition. Price 11. 1s. Boards.

**VARIETIES OF LIFE ; or, CONDUCT and CONSEQUENCES.** A Novel. By the Author of Sketches of Character. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 18s. Boards.

**THE RECLUSE OF NORWAY.** By Miss ANNA MARIA PORTER. 2d Edit. In 4 Vols. 12mo. Price 11. 4s. Boards.

**THE WELSH MOUNTAINEER.** A Novel. By CATHERINE HUTTON. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 16s. 6d. Boards.

**THE SCOTTISH CHIEFS.** A Romance. By Miss JANE PORTER, Author of Thaddeus of Warsaw, and Remarks on Sir Philip Sidney's Aphorisms. In 5 Vols. 12mo. The 4th Edit. Price 11. 15s. Boards.

*Popular Novels published by Longman & Co.*

**THADDEUS OF WARSAW.** A Novel. By MISS JANE PORTER. The 8th Edition. In 4 Vols. Price 18s. Boards.

**THE ANTIQUARY.** A Novel. By the Author of *Waverley*, and *Guy Mannering*. 2d. Edition. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 1l. 4s. Boards.

**GUY MANNERING: OR, THE ASTROLOGER.** By the Author of *Waverley*. 4th Edit. In 3 Vols. 12mo. 1l. 1s. Boards.

**WAVERLEY; OR, 'TIS SIXTY YEARS SINCE.** A Novel. 7th Edition. With a PREFACE by the Author. In 3 Vols. Price 1l. 1s. in Boards.

**DISCIPLINE.** A Novel. By the Author of *Self-Control*. 3d Edition. In 3 Vols. Post 8vo. Price 1l. 4s. Boards.

**ALICIA DE LACY.** A Historical Romance. By the Author of *The Loyalists*, &c. &c. In 4 Vols. 12mo. Price 1l. 8s.

**DUTY.** A Novel. By the late Mrs. ROBERTS, Author of *Rose and Emily*. Interspersed with Poetry, and preceded by a Character of the Author. By Mrs. OPIE. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 12s. Boards.

**CHRISTABELLE, THE MAID OF ROUEN.** A Novel, founded on Facts. By Mrs. HANWAY. Author of *Ellinor*, *Andrew Stewart*, and *Falconbridge Abbey*. In 4 Vols. 12mo. Price 1l. 4s. Boards.

**THE WANDERER; OR, FEMALE DIFFICULTIES.** By the Author of *Evelina*, *Cecilia*, and *Camilla*. The Second Edition. In 5 Vols. 12mo. Price 2l. 2s. Boards.

**THE LOYALISTS.** A Tale of other Times. By Mrs. WEST. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 1l. 1s. Boards.

"We are delighted with this book, which is at

*Popular Novels published by Longman & Co.*

**THE CASTLES OF ATHLIN AND DUN-BAYNE.** A Highland Story. By ANN RADCLIFFE. The 4th Edition. 12mo. Price 5s. 6d. Boards.

**THE WILD IRISH GIRL.** A National Tale. By Miss OWENSON, Author of the *Novice of St. Dominick*, &c. &c. &c. In 3 Vols. 12mo. The 5th Edit. Price 15s. Boards.

**SKETCHES OF CHARACTER; or, SPECIMENS OF REAL LIFE.** A Novel. In 3 Vols. 12mo. The 3d Edition. Price 15s. Boards.

**THE HISTORY OF FICTION**, being a Critical Account of the most celebrated *Prose Works of Fiction*, from the earliest Greek Romances to the Novels of the present Age. By JOHN DUNLOP, Esq. In 3 Vols. post 8vo. The 2d Edition, considerably enlarged and improved. Price 2l. 2s. Boards.

**THE BRITISH NOVELISTS**, with an Essay and Biographical and Critical Prefaces. By Mrs. BARBAULD. In 50 Vols. Royal 18mo., uniform with the British Essayists. A new Edition, *nearly ready*.

This Collection includes the most esteemed Works of Richardson, Fielding, Smollett, De Foe, Goldsmith, Horace Walpole, Hawkesworth, Johnson, Graves, Moore, Mackenzie, Miss Burney, Mrs. Radcliffe, Mrs. Inchbald, Mrs. Charlotte Smith, Mrs. Clara Reeve, Mrs. Brooke, Miss Edgeworth, &c.

**LETTERS FROM ENGLAND.** By DON MANUEL ALVAREZ ESPRIELLA. Translated from the Spanish. The Third Edition. In 3 Vols. 12mo. Price 18s. in Boards.

## ERRATA.

### VOL. I.

Page 121. line 5. from bottom, for *Caroline, I*, read *Caroline and I*.

243. l. 7. for *piscatore*, read *pescatore*.

244. l. 3. for *time*, read *term*.

263. l. 5. from bottom, for *So triumph!* read *Io Triumphe!*

273. l. last, for *stand*, read *stay*.

### VOL. II.

72. l. 18. for *Cambridge*, read *Standish*.

### VOL. III.

86. l. 10. for *task*, read *taste*.

87. l. last, for *had*, read *had had*.







1

1

1

